











# ESSAYS

[FIRST SERIES]

ON SOME OF THE

## PECULIARITIES

OF

## THE CHRISTIAN RELIGION.

BY

RICHARD WHATELY, D.D.

ARCHBISHOP OF DUBLIN.

---

Κύριε, πρὸς τίνα ἀπελευσόμεθα;—JOHN vi. 68.

---

SEVENTH EDITION, REVISED.

LONDON:

JOHN W. PARKER & SON, 445, WEST STRAND.

M DCCC LVI.

LONDON:  
PRINTED BY GEORGE PHIPPS, RANELAGH STREET,  
EATON SQUARE.

## P R E F A C E.

---

ON a new edition being called for of the three volumes, 1st, On some Peculiarities of the Christian Religion; 2d, On some of the Difficulties in the Writings of the Apostle Paul; 3d, On the Errors of Romanism as traced to their origin in Human Nature; I availed myself of this occasion to make a small alteration in the form in which they are presented to the public, so as to exhibit more clearly—as I now think ought to have been done originally—the kind and degree of connexion of each Series with the others, and the plan on which each was composed.

On each of the three occasions on which I was appointed to the office of Select Preacher before the University, I judged it best that the Discourses (usually from six to eight) which it came to my turn to deliver, should be not insulated and unconnected with each other, but a series, confined to some one subject or class of subjects; which might thus be the more likely to suggest to the hearers a train of profitable reflections. The substance of the Sermons delivered on the first of these occasions I threw

into the form of Essays, and published under that title. The favourable reception of that volume led to the subsequent publication of another Series of Essays, containing the substance of Sermons delivered on the second occasion of my holding the office. On the third occasion, though I published, as before, the substance of the Discourses delivered from the University-pulpit, I was induced so far to depart—injudiciously, as I now think—from the former plan, as to designate as “Chapters” those portions of the work, which, according to the analogy of the other volumes, would have naturally been called “Essays.” This difference, in itself trifling, was not unlikely to lead to the supposition of its being a work of a much more distinct character from the former two than in fact it is. And the title of it also, which I was persuaded, somewhat against my own judgment, to adopt, led some perhaps to conclude that it was one of the many controversial treatises which appeared about that time, on what was called the “Catholic-question.”

The title however—ill-chosen as it may have been—it is now too late to alter: but I have taken the liberty of changing the designation of “Chapters” for that of “Essays,” and of calling the volume a Third Series of Essays, in order to point out that it has the same kind of analogy to the former two as those have to each other; each of the three containing, respectively, the substance of a Course of University

sermons ; in all of which alike I have carefully abstained from political discussions, and from matters of local or transient controversy ; confining myself to questions purely religious, and which appeared to me of intrinsic and permanent importance.

Besides the alteration just alluded to, I have introduced some slight corrections, chiefly verbal, into the present edition ; adding also, in a few places, such further explanations and illustrations as appeared requisite,—compressing such parts as would admit of it—and omitting whatever, either from its referring to local or temporary circumstances, or for any other reason, could without detriment be spared.

In reference to the various replies,—criticisms—strictures—&c. directed against what I have advanced, which have appeared from time to time, and to which some of my readers may have expected me to give a formal answer, I take this opportunity of repeating the resolution long since made, to keep clear, as much as possible, of controversy.

This resolution does not spring from an arrogant contempt of all opponents, indiscriminately. On the contrary, I have, before now, taken occasion, in subsequent editions of my works, to express more clearly what had been thought liable to misinterpretation, and to supply deficiencies which had been pointed out. And if I shall ever find reason to believe that any

thing I have advanced is unscriptural, or otherwise erroneous, I shall take care to retract it.

But whenever, on the other hand, it shall appear that my statements have been misrepresented, or the force of my arguments underrated, either from carelessness, intellectual deficiency, or sophistical design, I shall leave to the works themselves, with the aid of time, the accomplishment of my vindication in the eyes of candid and intelligent readers ; and those of an opposite character I could not hope to convince by any reply that could be framed. At all events, I intend to engage in no paper war with any one.

I do not mean to pass any censure on those who are engaged in controversy : but most persons, I imagine, will admit that the prevailing tendency is rather towards an excess than a deficiency of polemical writing ; and that, even when controversy is begun with the best intentions, it often does more harm than good. Men are so constituted, as to feel (whether as parties or as mere spectators) great interest in a *contest* of any kind, *as* a contest : and a mind thus occupied is seldom in the most fit state for the calm and sober investigation of truth. As fresh and fresh combatants enter the field, each generally becomes more solicitous than the last, about victory, and less about truth ; considering rather what may be *said in answer* to each argument, than how much it may contain that is

just and valuable: while most of the bye-standers meantime, are becoming insensibly more like the auditors of one of the ancient school disputations, or the spectators of a tournament; more eager to see which party gets the better, than careful to make up their own minds aright, as to the question debated.

Considerations such as these, besides other reasons, have determined me to abstain strictly from all controversy, and (as far as lies in my power, without compromising important truths,) from every thing likely to lead to controversy.

This declaration, though it may perhaps prevent some attacks, may very likely invite more. But whether the charges brought against me shall be many or few, I shall leave them all unanswered; trusting that, if unjust, they will sooner or later fall to the ground of themselves: and earnestly hoping that the same may be the fate of my own doctrines, if they are indeed at variance with right reason or with God's word.

It may be said, indeed, that my answering some one particular charge, would not necessarily imply my engaging in a course of polemical writing:—that I might put forth a vindication, once for all, and there stop. But such a procedure, I am inclined to think, would be less prudent than to abstain from reply altogether. Should I once begin, I should be expected

to answer all, not only of the objections that have been hitherto brought forward, but of the rejoinders and surrejoinders, &c., which, in such a case, are usually called forth; (since "the beginning of strife is like the letting out of water") lest I should appear either to treat with undue contempt those who were left unnoticed, or to be silenced by unanswerable arguments. I have thought it most advisable therefore, on the whole, to keep clear of anything like the opening of a controversy; always protesting, however, against being understood as casting any censure on those engaged in any contest of this kind; and only claiming for myself the same liberty of judgment and of action which I am willing to allow to every one else.

Although however I have neither any wish to excite controversy, nor any intention of engaging in it, still it is not to me a matter of wonder or of mortification that objections should have been raised to some things that I have advanced. Any one who endeavours to inculcate any neglected truths, or to correct any prevailing errors, must be prepared, if he succeed in attracting any share of public attention, to encounter more or less of opposition. It would be most extravagant to expect to convince at once, if at all, every one, or even many, who before thought differently. If therefore, in such a case, he meet with no opposition, he may take that as a sign either that he has excited no interest at all, or that he was mistaken as to the state of the prevailing opinions among others,



or that his own have not been fully understood. Opposition does not indeed, of itself, prove either that he is right, or that he is wrong: but, at all events, the discussion which results is likely, if conducted with temper and sincerity, to lead to the ascertainment of the truth.

And it is worth remarking, that in many cases the opposition will appear even greater than it really is. For as the great majority of those who had before thought differently from an Author, will, in general, continue to think so, and of course will be prepared, at once, loudly to censure him; so, those, whether many or few, who are induced to alter, or to doubt, their former opinion, will seldom be found very forward to proclaim the change, at least till after a considerable interval. Even the most candid and modest, if they are also cautious, will seldom decidedly make up their minds anew, except slowly and gradually.

Hence it often happens, I believe, that while men are led, naturally enough, to estimate the effect produced by any work, from the comparative numbers and weight of those who applaud, and those who censure it, it shall, in fact, have produced little or no effect on either: those whom it may have really influenced, in bringing them to reconsider their former opinions, being rather disposed, for the most part, to say little about it.

Such as have maintained notions at variance with mine, in Christian meekness and candour, may be assured of my perfect good-will towards them, and of my earnest wish that whichever of us is in the right, may succeed in establishing his conclusions. As for any who may have assailed, or who may hereafter assail me, with unchristian bitterness, with profane flippancy, or with sophistical misrepresentation, much as I, of course, lament that such weapons should ever be employed at all, I can truly say, that I had far rather see them employed against me, than on my side. There is also this consolatory reflection for any one who is so attacked: that weak or sophistical arguments are then the most likely to be resorted to, when better cannot be found;—that one who indulges in invective, affords some kind of presumption, that he at least can find no such reasons as are even to himself satisfactory;—and that misrepresentation is the natural resource of those who find the positions they are determined to oppose, to be such, that if fairly stated, and fully understood, they could not be overthrown. Such attacks, therefore, tend rather, as far as they go, to support, than to weaken, in the judgment of rational inquirers, the cause against which they are directed.<sup>1</sup>

It may be observed too, that there are some particular charges often brought, without proof, against

---

<sup>1</sup> See Note to Essay II. § 4; and Note 2d to the Appendix.

an Author, which are not only unfounded, but are occasioned by qualities the very reverse of those imputed. One may hear a Writer censured as "sophistical," precisely because he is *not* sophistical; and as "dogmatical," *because* he is not dogmatical. For with a work that is really sophistical, the obvious procedure is, either to pass it by with contempt, or, if the fallacies seem worth noticing, to detect and expose them. But if men find the arguments opposed to them to be such, that they cannot *prove* them sophistical, it is yet easy (and it is not unnatural) at least to *call* them so. The phrase "sophistical arguments," accordingly, is often in reality equivalent to "such as I would fain answer, but cannot." Not that in such cases the imputation is necessarily insincere, or even necessarily false. One whose reasoning-powers are not strong, may really suspect, though he cannot point it out, a latent fallacy in some argument which leads to a conclusion he objects to; and it may so happen that his suspicion is right, and that a fallacy may exist which he has not the skill to detect. But then he is not justified in *pronouncing* the argument sophistical, till he is prepared to make good the charge. A verdict without evidence, must always be unjust, whether the accused be, in fact, innocent or guilty.

Dogmatism again, to speak strictly, consists in assertions without proof. But a person who does really thus dogmatize, one may often see received with

more toleration than might have been anticipated. Those who think with him, often derive some degree of satisfaction from the confirmation thus afforded to their opinion, though not by any fresh argument, yet by an implied assent to such as have convinced themselves : those again who think differently, feel that the Author has merely declared his sentiments, and (provided his language be not insolent and overbearing) has left them in undisturbed possession of their own. Not so, one who supports his opinions by cogent reasons : he seems by so doing to call on them either to refute the arguments, or to alter their own views. And however mildly he may express himself, they are sometimes displeased at the molestation thus inflicted, by one who is not content merely to think as he pleases, leaving others to do the same, but seems aiming to compel others (the very word “cogent,” as applied to reasons, seems to denote this character) to think with him, whether they like it or not. And this displeasure one may often hear vented in the application of the title “dogmatical ;” which denotes, when so applied, the exact reverse of dogmatism ; viz. that the Author is not satisfied with simply declaring his own opinions ; (which is really dogmatism ; ) but, by the reasoning he employs, calls on others to adopt them.

I am aware, however, that truth may be advocated, and by sound arguments, in a needlessly offensive form. And it has always been my aim to avoid, as

far as may be without a sinful compromise of truth, every thing tending to excite hostile feelings, either within or without the pale of my own Church.

In reference to the works cited or alluded to, with censure, or with approbation, in various parts of these volumes, and the names of which, in the former case, I have for the most part purposely omitted, I think it right to state in this place my reason for that procedure. No one, either personally or as an *individual* writer, is the object of any designed attack. The censure I have at any time thought it necessary to pass, has been always intended for the *opinions* maintained, or the arguments adduced. If there are several persons by whom these are admitted, then, the censure is directed against each of these persons, as much as against the Author I may have cited. If on the contrary the opinions alluded to in any case, are obsolete, or have attracted little or no notice, that is my mistake; I wish the error and the refutation of it to be forgotten together. To call attention to obscure and at the same time erroneous, works, is far from my design.

When, indeed, I meet with any thing that I deem an important error in the works of some Author on whom I may have thought it right to bestow high praise for some other parts of his writings on the same subject, there seems to be then a sufficient reason for distinctly alluding to him in the censure of such error,

lest his merits in other points should give it currency. And this is the single exception I have thought it right to make to the rule just mentioned.

On the other hand I have thought it proper to refer (whenever my memory would serve me) to any Author to whom I may have been indebted for a valuable remark. And I have been of course even the more careful to do this when it has happened that such an Author is one not generally known; because in that case I should be desirous, if possible, to call attention to his works.

Some of the works to which I have referred are those of living Authors whom I have the pleasure of knowing personally: and I am not sure that I may not, on that ground, incur censure for citing them with approbation; as if I must unavoidably be biassed by partial feelings. I would rather, however, incur the suspicion of such partiality, than of not daring to do that justice to a friend which would be due to a stranger. And it should in fairness be remembered, that though it is very possible to overrate a friend, yet, as it is also possible that a writer of real merit may possess personal friends, so, it would be hard that this should necessarily operate to his disadvantage, by precluding them from bearing just testimony in his favour.

It may be necessary however to add, that whatever

writers I may refer to, whether of small or of great reputation, I do not mean to appeal to any as of decisive *authority* or to adopt them as *guides*. Some of them may be such as to create more or less of a presumption in favour of their opinions till satisfactorily refuted. Others may supply valuable testimony as to the prevailing opinions in their time; or may suggest arguments which are to be judged of according to their intrinsic weight. But I have learned to "call no man Master upon earth;" and to make a final appeal to nothing but the records of inspiration and the force of just reasoning.

---





# CONTENTS.

## ESSAY I.

### REVELATION OF A FUTURE STATE.

	PAGE
§ 1 Importance of the doctrine of Man's Immortality, p. 19; spoken of in Scripture as peculiar to Christianity - -	20
2 A future state represented by some as discoverable and discovered, by Reason, p. 22; inquiry proposed whether the Pagans, and the Jews, had, properly, the <i>knowledge</i> of it -	22
3 Popular Mythology of the ancient Heathen respecting this subject, p. 23; shadowy and unreal sort of existence attributed to the departed - - - - -	25
4 Historical proofs that Elysium and Tartarus were generally regarded as fabulous - - - - -	30
5 Ancient Philosophers not believers in a future state of distinct consciousness, p. 35; arguments furnished by Reason, for and against it, p. 38; the immortality of the Soul taught by some of the ancients, amounts, practically, to annihilation - - - - -	41
6 Metaphysical arguments not to be fully trusted to, in such a question, p. 44; reasons for a future <i>state of retribution</i> , not conclusive as to a future <i>immortality</i> - - - -	46
7 Probable cause of the eagerness shown to prove that the doctrine was revealed to the Jews, p. 47; manifest inadequacy, for this purpose, of the scanty intimations in the Mosaic Law - - - - -	49
8 Passage in the Law appealed to by our Lord - - -	51
9 Unsuitableness of the revelation of a future state to the Old Dispensation, p. 54; mistakes relative to the interpretation of the ancient types and prophecies on this subject - -	56
10 Actual belief of the Jews in later periods - - - -	63
11 Opinion that Man may earn immortal happiness by the practice of virtue, p. 65; extravagance of the expectation on any ground but that of express promise - -	70
12 The doctrine of eternal life being a free gift, explained and vindicated - - - - -	71
13 Importance of perceiving and remembering that Christianity alone furnishes a well-grounded confidence of a future state	73
Note A. Opinions of Aristotle - - - - -	76

	PAGE
Note B. Of Cicero and others - - - - -	80
Note C. Bodily identity, and intermediate state - -	81
Note D. Testimony of Marcus Antoninus and Seneca -	82
Note E. Sanctions of the Mosaic Law, temporal -	<i>ib.</i>
Note F. Testimony of Episcopius and of Grotius	96, 97

## ESSAY II.

### ON THE DECLARATION OF GOD IN HIS SON.

§ 1 Peculiar mode of inculcating Piety and Morality in the Christian Scriptures, p. 98; declaration of God in his Son, not a mere divine commission - - - - -	100
2 Caution against expecting to understand the divine counsels, p. 101; and against expecting to know <i>all</i> the reasons for each revelation - - - - -	102
3 Advantages in respect of piety, from the manifestation of God in Christ - - - - -	105
4 Difficulty of attaining affectionate devotion in natural-religion, p. 105; sympathy combined with veneration, through the union of the divine and human natures - - -	109
5 Jesus a perfect Model, p. 115; advantages of this, over an imperfect, or an unreal model - - - - -	115
6 Summary of the argument, and introduction to the succeeding Essay - - - - -	117
Note G. Passage from Archbp. King, p. 119: explained and defended - - - - -	120
Note H. Extracts from B. White's "Poor Man's Preservative" - - - - -	123

## ESSAY III.

### ON LOVE TOWARDS CHRIST AS A MOTIVE TO OBEDIENCE.

§ 1 Appeal to the affections, a characteristic of the Gospel -	126
2 Opposite errors, of Antinomian enthusiasm, and of cold calculation - - - - -	127
3 Contrast between the reliance on mere prudential motives and the appeal to the heart - - - - -	132
4 Reference to <i>persons</i> , in the Scriptural delineation of future happiness - - - - -	133
5 Superior Expediency, as well as Dignity, in the Scriptural views - - - - -	136
6 Importance of contemplating the above, as constituting a peculiarity in the Christian religion - - - - -	140

## ESSAY IV.

## ON THE PRACTICAL CHARACTER OF REVELATION.

	PAGE
§ 1 Statement of the questions, whether a <i>pretended</i> , and whether a <i>true</i> , revelation, be likely to contain matters of mere <i>curiosity</i> , p. 142; the former question to be answered in the affirmative - - - - -	142
2 Confirmation of this, from experience - - - - -	144
3 A true revelation likely to be the reverse, p. 148; and ours, accordingly, not speculative but practical - - - - -	149
4 Modification and explanation of this assertion - - - - -	150
5 Practical character of Christianity maintained and illustrated, p. 154; doctrine of the Trinity, the foundation both of faith and practice - - - - -	156
6 Backwardness of our sacred writers to indulge our curiosity, p. 157; this, a proof of their inspiration - - - - -	159
7 Christianity, and that alone, such as we might expect a true revelation to be, and a false one, not to be - - -	<i>ib.</i>
8 What we are to look for in revelation; how to interpret; and how to apply it - - - - -	160
Note I. Difficulty of finding any thing revealed in Scripture that shall even appear to be merely speculative - - - - -	166

## ESSAY V.

## ON THE EXAMPLE OF CHILDREN AS PROPOSED TO CHRISTIANS.

§ 1 Twofold relations in which the condition of Christians is analogous to that of children, viz: the relation of children to their <i>parents</i> ; and to their own future <i>adult</i> state -	168
2 Our analogy to children in respect of <i>knowledge</i> , p. 169; which is a <i>relative</i> , p. 170; and also,	
3 A <i>limited</i> knowledge, p. 176; and, lastly,	
4 A <i>practically</i> -useful knowledge - - - - -	182
5 Analogy of Christians to children in respect of <i>duties</i> - -	183
6 Humility - - - - -	185
7 Docility, p. 186; not consisting in blind credulity - -	188
8 Resignation, p. 191; a part of wisdom, not of weakness -	192
9 Mode of making use of the example of children - - -	196
Note K. Illustration from the case of a person born blind and couched - - - - -	198
Note L. Extract from the Appendix to Archbp. King's Sermon - - - - -	199

## ESSAY VI.

ON THE OMISSION OF A SYSTEM OF ARTICLES OF FAITH,  
LITURGIES, AND ECCLESIASTICAL CANONS.

	PAGE
§ 1 The omission not to be explained on the principle developed in the Fourth Essay - - - - -	203
2 Indirect and irregular mode of teaching in the <i>existing</i> Scriptures - - - - -	206
3 Difficulty of explaining, from human causes why some more systematic instruction was not <i>superadded</i> - - -	210
4 Objection against Christianity thence raised, p. 211; in reality, a proof of its divine origin - - - - -	214
5 Wisdom of the omission - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
6 Mischiefs which would have resulted from the existence of inspired Liturgies, Catechisms, &c. - - - - -	216
7 Inspired Compendium of Faith, not desirable - - - - -	220
8 Use of Compositions of this kind by uninspired authors, p. 222; abuse of them - - - - -	222
9 Self-distrust distinguished from universal scepticism - - -	226
10 Liability to <i>actual</i> , as well as future, error, to be acknow- ledged by those who disclaim infallibility - - - - -	229
Note M. Self-distrust in respect of moral conduct - - -	231

## APPENDIX.

## ON THE ABSENCE OF A PRIESTHOOD. (44)

Christian religion without a priest in the ordinary sense, p. 233; equivocal use of the word, <i>ibid.</i> ; Romish corruption in this point, p. 235; and importance of the peculiarity in question, <i>ibid.</i> Christianity exempt from Priestcraft; and danger in practice, of introducing a vicarious religion - - - - -	235
---	-----

## INTRODUCTION.

---

THE greater part of the substance of the Essays contained in this volume was delivered in a Series of Discourses before the University of Oxford, on the first occasion of my holding the office of Select Preacher. They were not originally designed for publication ; but I was induced to entertain the idea, at the suggestion of some friends, whose opinions are entitled to deference, and who thought that the views contained in them might have the effect on some minds,—not, indeed, of introducing new doctrines,—but of awakening attention to some important points which are very frequently overlooked: and that the chain of argument would appear to more advantage, and would be likely to be more justly estimated, when comprised in a volume, than when delivered, as was necessarily the case, at considerable intervals, from the University-pulpit.

It is hardly necessary to observe, that I have not entertained the design of noticing *all* the peculiarities of the Christian religion ; which would indeed amount to little less than a complete system of theology ; nor even all the principal ones ; but those only which appeared to be the most frequently overlooked, or depreciated. That the unbeliever should rank Christianity along with the various systems of superstition which human fraud and folly have produced and maintained, keeping out of sight every circumstance that forms a distinction between the true coin and the counterfeit, is not to be wondered at ; but to oppose decided infidelity (though it is hoped some of the arguments adduced may be employed with effect for that purpose) has not been made

the primary object of these Essays. I have had in view the case of those who regard Christianity with *indifference*, rather than of those who reject it.

It is a more common, and not a less pernicious error, to regard Christianity as little else than the Religion of Nature, proclaimed by a special mission, for the benefit, chiefly, of those whose feebleness of intellect, ignorance, or depraved disposition, unfits them for discovering its truths by the light of Reason. The Gospel accordingly, while praised as a beautiful system, and highly extolled for its utility, is praised, in fact, for what does not belong to it, viz. its containing nothing of importance which a philosophical mind might not discover by its own unaided powers: and it is thence regarded as useful only for the less intelligent and less cultivated; in short, for the vulgar.

There are others, again, whose veneration for the Gospel is more real, but who erroneously think to honour and support it by laying a foundation which, in fact, tends to weaken and degrade the superstructure. Beginning with Natural-Religion, they attribute to that, much of what properly belongs to Christianity, and much that belongs to neither; and thus often lead to the perversion of some parts of the Gospel, and to the depreciation of others. In fact, the study of natural-religion ought properly to *follow*, or at least to accompany, not to precede, that of revelation. Our own speculations ought to be controlled and regulated by a divine revelation, when it is once ascertained that a revelation exists; they should not be left to range unlimited and unassisted, on a subject on which God has Himself decided that Man is not competent of himself to judge rightly. And if Reason be for some time enthroned as sole judge and lawgiver, she will not afterwards readily resign her seat, and submit her decisions, to Revelation; but will often exercise an undue interference.

It is sometimes complained, that the mind is unduly biassed in its judgments, by continual reference to the

authority of the Scriptures; and the complaint is just, when reference is made to them, on *other than religious* subjects. It is also just to complain of reference to Scripture on religious subjects, if Scripture does *not* really contain a divine revelation. But if it does, there is an opposite and corresponding danger to be guarded against; that of suffering the mind to be unduly biassed in the study and interpretation of the revealed will of God, by the deductions of unaided reason.

The dangers I have been speaking of have been, of late years, not diminished, but greatly increased, by events that have occurred since this Work was first published. A party has arisen within the Church whose proceedings are now regarded with alarm, by many even of those who despised the warnings given by myself and by several others, both before the avowed formation of the party, and during its earlier progress.<sup>1</sup> But the dangers which appear to me the most formidable are not those which alone are dreaded by some persons. I do not, indeed, doubt that several hundreds, perhaps thousands, comprising the most honest and consistent of the party, will have become, through its influence, converts to Romanism; and that others, and a number probably far greater, will have been driven to join some sects of dissenters. But all who shall have been thus led openly to renounce our Communion for another, will be found, I fear, much fewer than those whom the same causes will have led to, or confirmed in, total infidelity. And a much greater number still, will, I apprehend, have been induced to take refuge from troublesome doubt in apathetic indifference, and uninquiring acquiescence; considering that they have the authority of eminent Divines for deeming reflection and investigation worse than useless,—for regarding religion as altogether a matter of feeling,—and for concluding that if a man keeps up a decorous outward

---

<sup>1</sup> See *Essays* (3rd Series) on *Romish Errors*; *Pastoral Letter from the Pope*, &c.; *Powell on Tradition*; and *Index to the Tracts*.

attention to it, such as will impress the minds of the vulgar with a salutary awe, it matters little what may be his inward belief, or whether he have any at all. For, a strong impression has been produced, and is daily on the increase, that of that party claiming a special pre-eminence in point of *faith*, the leaders may perhaps, many of them, have no belief in what they teach, and the multitude of the led, no grounds for their belief. Whether this opinion be correct or not, it does exist; and I cannot see that its existence is to be wondered at, or complained of.

For *1st*, the writings from which it is derived indicate in their general tone, that Christianity will not stand the test of close inquiry. They deride, as absurd, and censure, as profane, and deprecate, as hazardous, all attempts to investigate evidence; making faith not the result of evidence, but something opposed to it. And going still further, they distinctly declare all the evidences of Christianity that have been put forth by the ablest divines, to be absolutely inferior to that which satisfies an ignorant clown, who believes just what the Pastor of his parish tells him, and *for no other reason*;—for the same reason, that is, which satisfies the Hindoos and the South-sea cannibals. Thus, the strongest evidences, be it remembered, that have ever occurred to the minds of the most intelligent Christians, are represented as absolutely weaker than that which is confessedly and notoriously good for nothing!

*2dly.* The impression thus produced is strengthened by the circumstance that these writers patronize the system of "*Reserve*,"<sup>1</sup> "*Economy*," "*Phenakism*," or "*Double-doctrine*;"—the allowableness, and the duty, of having one Gospel for the mass of the people, and another for the initiated few. Now, he who professes this principle, and is believed in that profession, need not wonder to find that he is thenceforward believed in *nothing else*. For when it is

---

<sup>1</sup> See Dr. West's *Discourse on Reserve*.



known that a man wears a mask, all persons will form their own conjectures as to what is under it. Nor can the ascertainment of the real private opinion of any individual of that School, go one step towards removing the veil that hangs over the School itself; because, we should remember, the system implies not merely *double* doctrine, but treble and quadruple, &c., to an indefinite extent. He who teaches for Gospel something different from what he secretly holds, may himself be kept in the dark no less by *his* instructors, as to *their* secret belief; and these again may be mystified in the same way by others; and so on without limit.

And this disingenuous system is a tree which has, of late, borne fruits that have startled many, even of those who could not see, when first pointed out to them, the natural tendency of the system. The fundamental doctrines of our Reformers have been explained away, by interpreting their words in a non-natural sense, so as to allow members of our Church to hold tenets the most opposite. Now, how can any one be sure that the application of the principle is arbitrarily stopped short at this point? Let any one examine, and compare together, *these non-natural interpretations*, and the language, *in reference to Christianity*, of the foreign *Transcendentalists*; who profess to believe that Christianity came from God;—in the same sense in which *every thing* comes from God;—who teach the Incarnation,—explaining to the initiated that this means the presence of the Deity, *i. e.*, of the “spiritual principle” which pervades the universe—the God of Pantheism—in *man, generally*, as well as in *all other* animals; and who profess a belief in man’s immortality,—that is, that the *human species* will never become extinct, &c. Let any one, I say, compare together these two systems, (if indeed they are to be reckoned as *two*,) and say whether there is ANY GREATER VIOLENCE DONE TO THE ORDINARY SENSE OF WORDS BY THE ONE THAN BY THE OTHER; whether he who professes himself a *churchman* according to the one system, may not, with perfect con-

sistency, profess himself a *Christian* according to the other. Even supposing therefore that all the disciples of the School in question do inwardly believe in the truth of Christianity, they cannot give any sufficient assurance that they do so.

And the exhibition of this disingenuousness is likely to endanger the faith both of those who are, and of those who are not, themselves of an honest and open disposition. Both will perceive that there is reason to doubt the sincere belief of men who are not only professed Christians,—not only celebrated as able Divines,—but also venerated as men of pure and holy character, even by some who do not adopt their peculiar views. And this last circumstance,—the jesuitical tone of morality, which makes pious fraud consistent with Christian virtue, excluding disingenuousness from the list of “vices,”—cannot but produce a powerful effect. When men see that the sincerity with which a supposed good object is pursued is allowed to excuse insincerity in the means employed,—to excuse not only the disguise of one’s own sentiments, but also the deliberate misrepresentation of an opponent’s, and to justify the bringing forward of heavy charges against a certain Church, which are afterwards admitted not to have been, at the time, believed to be well-founded,—all this cannot but tend to disparage Christianity itself (if the picture of it thus presented be supposed a faithful one) in the eyes of the scrupulously honest and guileless, in proportion to their abhorrence of all double-dealing. And those, again, of a lower tone of morality, who confine the term “vice” to intemperate sensuality and the like, will be encouraged, themselves, to make professions of what they do not believe, and of which they suspect their eminently virtuous leaders to believe as little.

3dly. Moreover, the writings in question discourage,—indirectly, but in effect, and with great assiduity,—the study of Scripture. In the first place, they labour assiduously to place on a level with Scripture-history the voluminous

Legends of the pretended Middle-age-miracles. And they also represent strongly the uselessness, and the danger, of studying Scripture as a guide to the Christian, without constant reference to the interpretations of primitive Tradition.<sup>1</sup> Now the teaching of *this* guide is to be learnt from the Works of the Fathers; which are quite as difficult to be understood, and as liable to variety of meanings, as Scripture itself; Works, too, mostly untranslated, and far too voluminous for above one person in a hundred thousand to master. Men are thus taught that they must, at any rate, take their religion on trust, each from the teacher he is placed under; and must be guided by his report of what certain learned Divines have decided, respecting the opinions of the most orthodox of the ancient Fathers, as to the reports current in their times, of what was taught by the Apostles. Any one who is thus convinced that his religious faith must, at any rate, rest on the *report* of a *report* of a *report* of a *report*, will hardly think it worth his while to peruse the Scriptures themselves, except as a matter of curiosity; but will be likely indolently to acquiesce in the whole of what is told him, in the mass:—to acquiesce in it, I mean, as a faithful statement of what Christianity is; either resolving to believe it in the mass, without incurring the risk of examination; or else, disbelieving it, on the ground of its being confessedly unfit to bear examination.

*4thly.* The earnestness again with which these writers deprecate “private judgment,” has a similar tendency. For, waiving all considerations as to the *right*, and as to the *duty*, of private judgment, it must be evident to all who are not incapable of reasoning, that there is an unavoidable *necessity* of private judgment on any subject wherein we *take any serious interest*. The responsibility is one which, however unfit we may deem ourselves to bear it, we cannot

---

<sup>1</sup> See the Articles “Tradition,” “Christian,” “Church,” in the *Index to the Tracts*.

possibly get rid of. The fallacy<sup>1</sup> which often misleads men in this matter, is, that we *can* refrain from exercising private judgment on *this or that particular* point, by *transferring* our judgment to some *other* point. For instance, a man distrusting his own knowledge of Medicine, may refrain from exercising any judgment as to the remedies he should use, and may put himself wholly in the hands of a physician: that is, he *judges* that a physician is needful, and that such and such a practitioner is worthy of confidence. Or, supposing he distrusts his own judgment on *this* point also, then, he consults some friend whom he *judges* to be trustworthy, as to what physician he shall employ. In one way, or else in another, he *cannot but* exercise private judgment. And it is the same in all matters; except those in which we *take no interest*, and which do not occupy our thoughts. In most of the causes, for instance, that are tried in a court of justice, we do not trouble ourselves to exercise any judgment, simply because we do not know or care enough about either plaintiff or defendant to be interested in the decision.

When then a man is told by those he looks up to as the ablest Divines, that he ought not to exercise private judgment in religious matters, he will soon perceive, if he possess even a moderate share of intelligence, that this precept can be complied with only in one way; by *withdrawing his attention* as much as possible from the whole subject, except as far as regards outward forms and observances, and sedulously refraining from asking of himself the questions, what the Christian religion is, and what truth there is in it. And this state of mind is closely allied to, and immediately leads to, that which it has been my present object to guard against.

*5thly.* There are similar injurious tendencies, again, in the doctrine of "Apostolical succession" in that sense in which it has of late been the fashion to maintain it; and

---

<sup>1</sup> See *Logic*, Book iii. § 11.

which leads to the conclusion that Christianity is mainly a religion of *outward ordinances*; Gospel-truth, and the Gospel-character being of much less importance. For, men are taught that christian salvation depends on the due reception of certain rites administered by those whose regular Ordination in an unbroken chain from the Apostles gives a sacramental virtue to their ministry; and that their flocks are to receive with uninquiring deference the “teaching of the Church,” that is, of such Ministers. And it is maintained, expressly by some, and impliedly by others, that a special supernatural Providence has always interfered (as indeed would be manifestly necessary) to preserve, in every instance, this chain from being broken by any irregularity, in half-barbarian Ages and Regions, full of ignorance and disorder of all kinds.

But as for *Christian doctrine and practice*, in these, it is notorious what gross and wide-spread corruptions have arisen in Christendom, beginning even in the very Apostolic age. Against *these* corruptions, it is manifest, no such supernatural safeguard was provided. The “apostolical succession” of right faith and right conduct was not secured by any miraculous interference. And as for endeavouring to guard ourselves (as to me appears to have been the design of Providence) against errors and corruptions by a devout and diligent study of Scripture, and careful exercise of our own reason thereon, this is prohibited. Men are not—according to the above system—to exercise any private judgment on the subject, but are bound to acquiesce in whatever their pastors may tell them. Not only therefore was there, on the above principle, no provision made for the preservation of *truth*, but what amounts to a provision for the inculcation and establishment of *error*: while, on the other hand, a supernatural provision did, it seems, exist, against the nullity of *ordinances* through the interruption of the chain of apostolical succession of Ministers.<sup>1</sup> The conclusion there-

---

<sup>1</sup> See Eden's *Theol. Dicty.* Art. “Apostolical Succession.”

fore cannot but force itself on every intelligent mind, that Christianity,—if this be a true representation of it,—is *mainly a system of outward ordinances*; and that what some regard as its essentials, a christian faith and a christian heart, are comparatively a small part of it. Those who, in consequence, reject the religion, as on a level with the Brahminical superstitions, and those who receive it as thus represented, will alike have been alienated from true Christianity.

Let any one but pass in review before his mind the several points which have been here briefly sketched, (and to which more, of the same kind, might have been added,) and consider in how many different ways the writings alluded to tend to create and to foster irreligion; and he will see reason, I think, instead of wondering at the amount of it that now exists, to conclude that it might have been anticipated from a knowledge of human nature; and that there is ground for alarming apprehensions of its increase. Let a man be but once convinced, 1st, that Christianity cannot stand the test of inquiry,—2dly, that he has no ground for certainty as to the real belief of those who teach it,—3dly, that Scripture need not be studied,—4thly, that he had better withdraw his thoughts as much as possible from the subject, since otherwise he could not but exercise that private judgment which is forbidden,—and 5thly, that Christianity is mainly a system of outward ordinances,—let him but adopt all these notions, and what is there to stand between him and infidelity or indifference?

Of the points now slightly noticed I have treated more fully in the *Essays* (4th Series) on the “Dangers to the Christian Faith,” and in those on the “Kingdom of Christ.” But some mention of the subject appeared needful in this place, because there are so many even of those who do not themselves belong to the school I have been alluding to, who are, even yet, but imperfectly aware of the real tendency of its principles;—who consider the danger to be merely that of a revival of some obsolete ceremonies, or perhaps, at the

utmost, of a few conversions to Romanism : or who regard it as entitled to a mixture of praise with slight censure, as having called increased attention to Church-architecture, and to rubrical strictness ; little dreaming, of course, that it is a deep-seated canker eating into the very vitals of Christian faith ; and that the “ tithes of mint and rue and cummin ” are but a set-off against the mischief done to the “ weightier matters.” And others again there are, who feel, indeed, some apprehensions such as my own, of the spread of infidelity in consequence of the teaching of that School, but apprehend it as something that may arise in a future generation ; whereas, to me, it appeared, from the very first, that the danger was as immediate as it is great ; and inquiry may now convince any one that the tree is already bearing its poisonous fruits, that they are fast ripening all around us, and that “ the plague is begun.”

Respecting the peculiarities about to be noticed, various misconceptions are afloat, according to the diversity both of the several points in question, and of the habits of mind of different individuals. A circumstance may be either utterly *overlooked* and disregarded ;—or it may be supposed not *connected with*, or not *peculiar* to, our religion, while in fact it is so ;—or its importance may be *underrated*. This variety in the errors to be guarded against, must give rise occasionally to a corresponding variety in the topics dwelt on ; and the necessity of thus shifting the attention successively to different quarters, may, it is feared, give a desultory and interrupted appearance to some parts of the work ; but the inconvenience is one which cannot be entirely avoided, when it is necessary, within a moderate compass, to maintain and illustrate, with a view to different descriptions of readers, several different positions, all intimately connected with the main object.

Numerous, indeed, and various are the misapprehensions which have prevailed (not to advert to heresies which have been formally stigmatised as such) respecting the pecu-

liarities of the Christian religion: for as, on the one hand, many deny to the Gospel much of what belongs to it, or refer to the religion of nature much that belongs *exclusively* to Christianity,—so, on the other hand, many, and sometimes even the same, persons attribute to the Gospel-revelation what forms no part of it; or represent that as peculiar to it which really does lie within the reach of natural reason. A familiar instance of this last is the representation given by some of the doctrine of the corrupt nature of Man; which they represent as a truth resting on revelation, and claiming to be acknowledged as an article of faith not discoverable by reason: whereas, daily experience sufficiently proves it; and though there are still, and ever will be, some who will not learn from experience, men of sense, in all ages, seem to have fallen little, if at all, short of the truth, in that point. The *history*, indeed, of the fall of Man is revealed in Scripture; but the actual *condition* of Man, though often adverted to, can hardly be said to be *revealed* in Scripture,—any more than the truths, that the sun shines by day and the moon by night. The origin of evil, again, not a few are apt to speak of, as explained and accounted for, at least in great part, by the Scripture accounts of sin “entering into the world, and death by sin;” whereas, the Scriptures leave us, with respect to the difficulty in question, just where they find us, and are manifestly not designed to remove it. He who professes to *account* for the existence of evil, by merely tracing it up to the *first* evil recorded as occurring, would have no reason to deride the absurdity of an atheist, who should profess to account for the origin of the human race, without having recourse to a Creator, by simply tracing them up to the *first* pair.

Errors of this class, however, the nature of my design, in the following Essays, will only allow me to notice slightly and incidentally: the principal object proposed being, to guard against those of the opposite description, which tend to the depreciation, and ultimately the neglect, of Chris-



tianity, by keeping out of sight, or underrating, many of its great and important peculiarities.

Let any one, in company with persons as well educated and as reflective as a large proportion of the higher classes are, give utterance to such opinions and sentiments as the following: "That all religions teach men to look for future retribution," (see *Essay I.*)—"That they all inculcate piety toward some Divine Being, and moral conduct," (see *Essays II. III. V.*)—"That they all profess to furnish revelations respecting the Deity, and the world to come," (see *Essay IV.*)—"That they all are occupied in laying down directions as to what men are required to believe and to do," (see *Essay VI.*)—and "that they all have their priests and their priestcraft," (see Appendix)—"That all of them may do some good, in proportion as they are framed conformably to the principles of sound philosophy, and pure morality; but that a man of upright heart and cultivated understanding, need not much trouble himself with examining the pretensions of any of them, because his heart and head will lead him to the knowledge of those most important truths, the immortality of the soul, and the tendency of virtue, and of vice, to insure happiness, and misery, generally, in this life, and certainly in the next: that he will thus have attained all the good, unmixed with the evil, that any religion can convey to the less-educated classes; and that whatever truth there may be in the pretensions of any religion to a divine origin, he cannot have anything to fear in consequence of his want of faith in it, since he will have reached, though by another road, the same point towards which any true religion must tend." And let him conclude by citing some lines from the *Essay on Man*, or the *Universal Prayer*, of Pope, whose rhymes often supply admirably the defects of his reasons; as, for instance,

"For modes of faith let senseless bigots fight;  
His can't be wrong whose life is in the right."

Let such sentiments, I say, be promulgated in such company

as one may often meet with, and I am much mistaken if several of the hearers will not readily acquiesce in them. And yet, in every one of the points in respect of which all religions will have been thus indiscriminately thrown together, Christianity does, in fact, stand eminently distinguished from all the rest, by strikingly peculiar features. It bears only that superficial and general resemblance to them which a genuine coin bears to its various counterfeits. To establish and illustrate this conclusion, is the object of the present work.

Bishop Warburton's *Divine Legation* is a work too well known to require that a distinct reference should be made to it in every place in which I have availed myself of his learning and ingenuity. I can hardly be suspected of wishing to impose on the public as my own, what I have borrowed from an author who has so long been before them. To have exhibited clearly in a small space, separated from extraneous matter, and from topics of temporary controversy, some of the most important parts of an inestimably valuable, but voluminous, digressive, and incomplete work, may prove advantageous not only to such as have not studied the work, but, in some degree, to many also even of those who are familiar with it.

So general, however, is the tendency in men to enlist themselves under the banner of some leader, and to take for granted that every one does so, in respect of any author he professes to admire, that it may not be unnecessary for me to protest against being regarded as a "follower" of Warburton, in the sense either of adopting any conclusion on his *authority*, or of acquiescing throughout in *every thing* he may have maintained.

On some minor points, and in some collateral discussion, he has advanced more than could be satisfactorily established; and has been successfully encountered by several writers. But as for his main positions, the arguments with which they have been assailed (the principal of which are

noticed in the first of these *Essays*), are such as I can hardly think any intelligent man would have adduced, or would have listened to, except under the influence of strong prejudice.

This prejudice was doubtless increased by an air of arrogant self-sufficiency, and love of paradox, which does certainly pervade several parts of his work. But it was probably excited principally by the originality of some of his views, and the learning and ability with which they were defended.

Indeed, one indication of the ability he displayed, and the impression produced by it, is, that doctrines have been attributed to *him*, as their *originator*, which had been maintained by others long before. One instance of this I have noticed in Note (F), at the end of the first of these *Essays*; and another, in Note (A) to *Essay V.* of the third Series.

Yet, in an article on Bishop Warburton's *Works*, which appeared some years ago in the *Edinburgh Review*, the *Divine Legation* is spoken of as a series of absurd paradoxes, not worth refuting; and as fallen into general contempt and oblivion. And the only answer, accordingly, which the writer deigns to give, consists of some notes of admiration!

There may be shallow and ignorant readers who will accept, in place of an argument, an exclamation of contemptuous wonder. But if the reviewer had made fuller inquiry, he would have learnt that the Work is one which is regarded—in *England* at least—with anything but contempt, even by those who dissent from its conclusions; and that a man would be reckoned, by the most competent judges, imperfectly educated—as a theological student at least—who had not read it.

Indeed, the mistake might have been rectified by one of the earliest and of the most active of the writers in that very Review—the late Rev. Sydney Smith,—who (in a work reviewed in No. 184 of the *Edinburgh Review*, April,

1850, p. 363) alludes to Bishop Warburton as one of those eminent men whose philosophy had not led them to irreligion. "These sciences," says he, "certainly made no infidel of Bishop Warburton,—as Chubb, Morgan, Tindal, and half-a-dozen others, found to their cost."

And if the Reviewer had taken the further trouble to peruse attentively the Work he speaks of with such rash contempt, he would, perhaps, have perceived that the chief paradoxes lie on the side of its opponents. To prove either that Moses did design to teach, as a part of the sanction of his Law, the doctrine of retribution after death,—or, again, that the author of a *pretended* revelation *would* not have been likely to put forward this sanction, (as was done by the other ancient legislators,) but would have attempted—and succeeded in the attempt—to establish and maintain his system by the sanction of temporal rewards and punishments *alone*, administered according to an extraordinary Providence,—to maintain either of these propositions, is, surely, to take the paradoxical side.

These paradoxes, however, have been maintained, though more by declamation than by anything that can properly be called argument. And it is curious and instructive to observe, that Warburton's principal opponents, and some of the most virulent, have been not infidel but christian writers, who appeared eager to second the assaults made on this great champion of their faith, by its adversaries. They remind one of the Israelites binding Sampson, hand and foot, and delivering him into the hands of the Philistines. "And he snapped the cords, as a thread of tow is broken when it toucheth the fire."

The case of Bishop Warburton, however, is only one out of many that could be adduced in disproof of what has been said as to "theological literature being a protected literature."<sup>1</sup> The fear of odium may indeed sometimes deter a

---

<sup>1</sup> In a very able Article, (Art. VIII.) in the *Edinburgh Review* for April, 1850.

man from writing *against* the prevailing religion; but if any one in writing *for* it calculates on exemption from attacks, he is not unlikely to be greatly disappointed. If he write in defence of the tenets of his own communion, he may perhaps be assailed (supposing his work to attract any considerable notice) not only by the members of other communions, but by very many fellow-members of his own; who will perhaps charge him with "paradox," or "heresy;" or with going too far, or not far enough; or with having advanced—or not having advanced—beyond his own original principles; or perhaps with all of these faults at once.<sup>1</sup> Or if, again, he write in defence of Christianity generally, he will probably be censured by a greater number of Christians, of various denominations, than of anti-christians. In the extracts from several writers (to which many others might have been added), printed in parallel columns at the end of the Appendix to the *Logic*, a specimen may be seen of the sort of "protection" likely to be enjoyed by a work on Christian Evidences. Some who are sincere believers, if not in the *truth* of Christianity, at least in its *utility* to the mass of the People, are afraid that these would be shaken in their belief by inquiry and reflection.<sup>2</sup> Others, again, being anxious that the People should believe not only in the divine origin of Christianity, but in several other things besides, of which *no* satisfactory proof can be afforded, are fearful of giving any one the habit of seeking, and finding, good grounds for *one portion* of his faith, lest he should require equally valid reasons for believing the rest, and should reject what cannot be so proved; and accordingly,

---

<sup>1</sup> That all these complaints have been made not only of the same individual, but *by* members of the same religious-party, may seem something almost incredible; but it is a fact.

<sup>2</sup> A speaker in an illustrious assembly professed (according to the reporters) his firm adherence to the

religion of the Established Church, as being "the religion of his ancestors." And this sentiment was received with cheers. Some of the hearers probably not recollecting that on that principle the worship of Thor and Woden would claim precedence.

they prefer that the whole should be taken on trust—on the strength of mere assertion. And enthusiasts, again, of all descriptions, being accustomed to believe whatever they do believe on the evidence of their own feelings and fancies alone, are most indignant against any one who—in compliance with the apostolic precept—endeavours to give—and to teach others to give—“a reason of the hope that is in them.”

On the whole, therefore, it does not appear that anything like “protection” can be reckoned on, for works either on Christianity itself, or on any particular doctrines of it.

---

# ESSAY I.

---

## REVELATION OF A FUTURE STATE.

---

THE doctrine of man's immortality, when once the mind can be brought to dwell intently on the subject, is certainly the most interesting and the most important that can be presented to him. Other objects may, and often do, occupy more of our attention, and take a stronger hold of our feelings; but that, in real importance, all those objects are comparatively trifles, no one can doubt. Other matters of contemplation, again, may be, in themselves, not less awful, stupendous, and wonderful; but none of these can so intimately concern ourselves. Admirable as is the whole of God's creation, no other of his works can be so interesting to Man, as Man himself; sublime as is the idea of the eternal Creator himself, our *own* eternal existence after death is an idea calculated to strike *us* with still more overpowering emotions. That Man, feeble, and shortlived as he appears on earth, is destined by his Maker to live for ever—that ages hence, when we and our remotest posterity shall have been long forgotten on earth—and countless ages yet beyond, when this earth itself, and perhaps a long succession of other worlds, shall have come to an end—we shall still be living; still sensible of pleasure or pain, to a greater degree perhaps than our present nature admits of, and still having no shorter space of existence before us than at first—these are thoughts which overwhelm the imagination the more, the longer it dwells upon them. The understanding cannot adequately embrace the truths it is compelled to acknowledge: and when, after intently gazing for some time on this vast prospect,

we turn aside to contemplate the various courses of earthly events and transactions, which seem like rivulets trickling into the boundless ocean of eternity, we are struck with a sense of the infinite insignificance of all the objects around us that have a reference to our present state alone; while every the most minute circumstance, that may concern the future life, like a seed from which some mighty tree is to spring, rises into immeasurable importance, as the awful reflection occurs that perhaps something which is taking place at this very moment may contribute to fix our final destiny. There is no one truth, in short, the conviction of which tends to produce so total a change in our estimate of all things.

The powerful influence which such a belief is likely to have on the conduct of those who keep it habitually before them, is too obvious to need being insisted on: but it may be interesting, and not unprofitable, to inquire, by *whom* a doctrine thus sublime in contemplation, thus important in practice, was first proposed to us;—by whom “life and immortality were brought to light:” proposed, I mean, not as a matter of curious speculation, and interesting conjecture, but of general, and well-grounded, and practical belief; brought to light, not as an ingenious and pleasing theory, but as an established truth; displayed to us, not as a wandering meteor that serves but to astonish and amuse us, but as the great luminary which is destined to brighten our prospect, and to direct our steps.

Now, that “Jesus Christ brought life and immortality to light through the Gospel,” and that, in the most literal sense, which implies that the revelation of this doctrine is *peculiar* to his Gospel, seems to be at least the most obvious meaning of the Scriptures of the New Testament. The doctrine in question, which occupies a very prominent place in the preaching of the Apostles, appears in general to be taught by them not as one already well established, resting on sufficient evidence, and which they had only to acknowledge



and confirm, but as a part of the *revelation* which they were commissioned to communicate.

That infidels who admit the doctrine should reject this account of its establishment, is at least consistent; but there are not a few among Christians who seem to regard it as a truth, not only discoverable, but actually discovered, by unassisted human reason; and who have maintained, that though debased and perverted in form by ignorant superstition, it has been in substance fully and generally admitted, in almost all ages and countries. And there have been others, who, though not going the length of making this knowledge a part of *natural* religion, and ascribing it to the *Pagan* nations of antiquity, have yet insisted that it is a part of the revelation given through Moses to the Israelites.

§ 2 In favour of the first of these opinions, it is often pleaded, in addition to the direct arguments drawn from the Pagan writers, that to deny the power of reason to establish this truth, is to weaken the foundation of natural religion, and to diminish the support it affords to Christianity: it is even contended by one writer of no small repute, that “the natural revolutions and resurrections of other creatures render the resurrection of the body highly probable. The day dies into a night, and is buried in silence and in darkness; in the next morning it appeareth again and reviveth, opening the grave of darkness, rising from the dead of night; this is a diurnal resurrection. As the day dies into night, so doth the summer into winter;” &c. &c. &c. In favour of the latter also of the above-mentioned opinions, it has been urged, that to acknowledge no revelation of a future state in the law of Moses, is “derogatory to God’s honour, injurious to the Mosaic dispensation, a very erroneous and dangerous doctrine,” &c. &c., and this in a discourse on the very text which asserts that “Jesus Christ brought life and immortality to light through the Gospel!” To reconcile this

passage with such opinions, (which a Christian who entertains them is evidently bound to do,) has been attempted in a manner which may fairly be designated *explaining away* those words of the Apostle; and indeed not those words only, but the general tenor of the whole of the preaching of the Apostles, as far as relates to the point in question; so as to lay them open to the censure of giving an overcharged representation of the Gospel scheme, when they characterize it as "bringing life and immortality to light."

I shall not, however, at present dwell on this inconsistency; because as long as the notion remains unrefuted, that the doctrine of a future immortality could be known, and was known, independently of the Gospel, any arguments which go to prove that the first preachers of Christianity *professed* to exhibit the first revelation of that truth, would be worse than unserviceable;—would tend only to expose them to the imputation of making *groundless* pretensions, and thus to give a colour to the cavils of the infidel, who is ready enough to charge them with falsely laying claim to the original announcement of a doctrine already well established.

It will be advisable therefore to inquire first into the notions entertained on this subject by the ancient Pagans and by the Jews, and into the grounds on which those notions rested; in order that the questions may be, as far as possible, decided, how far natural Reason, and how far the Mosaic Revelation, are calculated to afford, what I can find only in the Gospel, a rational and a well-established assurance of a future state. I say, "well-established," because if the doctrine were made to rest even on the most decisive evidence, but on such evidence as could not be comprehended by any but profound philosophers, the mass of mankind would still need a revelation to assure them of it. On the other hand, I say, "rational," as well as "established," because however general and *confident* the belief of it might be, if that belief rested on no "rational"

grounds, it would still need to be made known (since conjecture is not knowledge) on sufficient authority. It is important therefore to remember, that there are two points, neither of which should be lost sight of in the present inquiry: in what degree the belief of a future state *prevailed* among the ancients; and how far those who did entertain such belief were *correct* in their notions of it, and *warranted* in maintaining them: since it is plain, that no opinion deserves to be called knowledge, except so far as it is not only agreeable to truth, but also supported by adequate evidence.

It ought to be observed, that, in order to avoid vagueness and ambiguity in speaking of the *knowledge* of a future state, or of any thing else, we should steadily keep in mind the precise signification of the word Knowledge; which implies, when strictly employed, three things; viz. Truth, Proof, and Conviction. It is plain, that no one can, properly speaking, be said to *know* any thing that is not *true*, however confident his belief of it may be: but even if to this confident belief, truth be added, still there is properly no knowledge, unless there is sufficient proof to *justify* such confidence: one man, *e. g.* may feel fully satisfied that the moon is inhabited, and another may feel equally certain that it is not; and one of them must have *truth* on his side; but neither in fact possesses *knowledge*, because neither can have sufficient proof to offer. Lastly, both truth and proof are insufficient to constitute knowledge in the mind of one to whom that proof is not completely satisfactory: it is true that the angles of a triangle are equal to two right angles; but though Euclid's demonstration of that truth is complete, no one can be said to *know* that they are so, who is not fully convinced by that demonstration, but remains in a state of hesitation.

§ 3 The popular mythology of the Greeks and Romans (to direct our attention in the first place to the Pagan nations) did certainly contain ample descriptions of a life after this,

and of the places prepared for the reward and punishment, respectively, of the virtuous and the wicked. And though it might be urged, with truth, that this mythology, resting as it did on no other evidence than that of vague, and incoherent, and contradictory tradition, could not afford any *rational* assurance of a future state,<sup>1</sup> and also that it did not inculcate the doctrine of a *resurrection*, and was in many other points greatly at variance with what Christians receive as the authentic and true account; still it must be admitted, that a system so far correct in its outline as to contain the notion of a just judgment, and a state of retribution hereafter, to be influenced by our conduct during the present life, would, in some degree, supply the want of the Gospel-revelation on these points; provided it were (on whatever evidence) fully and firmly, and generally *established* among the mass of the community.

Now that this was not the case with respect to the accounts of a future state current among the ancients, is the conclusion which will present itself to any one who examines the question fully and candidly. I say, fully and candidly, because one whose researches are very limited, will not be unlikely to have met with such passages only in ancient writers as would, of themselves, lead to a contrary conclusion; and one who is strongly prepossessed in favour of that conclusion, will confine his attention to those passages, seeking only to explain away all that militate against it. The truth is, there *are* many passages to be found (and that, frequently

---

<sup>1</sup> Such, of course, must be the case with the notions of Pagans of the present day on the subject, as well as with those of the barbarous nations of antiquity, of whose mythology we have no distinct and authentic accounts. How far the doctrine of a future state did or does prevail, and prevail as a matter of *serious belief*, in those nations, it is by no means easy to determine on sufficient

evidence. In those of modern times it is also difficult, if not impossible, to decide, whether, and to what degree; some parts of their religion may have been derived, through a remote and corrupt tradition, from the Gospel. The fairest mode of trying the question therefore seems to be, by examining the opinions that prevailed *before* the promulgation of the Gospel.

in the same authors) of each description; some that seem to imply the general belief, and others the disbelief, of the accounts of a future life. And some have dwelt on the *numerical* superiority of those passages that favour the doctrine; as if a book were to be regarded in the same light as a legislative assembly, in which we have only to *count* the votes on each side, and consider the decision of the majority as that of the whole. But it should be remembered, that, in such a case, the expressions which negative the belief are entitled to far the greater weight. For there can be no doubt, that the fables of Elysium and Tartarus were a part of the popular religion, which it was usually thought decorous to speak of with respect; and the doctrine of a future state was regarded as especially expedient to be inculcated on the vulgar, in order to restrain them in cases beyond the control of human laws; so that a good reason can be assigned for a philosopher's appearing to consider the doctrine as indubitable, though he neither believed it himself, nor could flatter himself that it was so generally believed as he might think desirable: whereas, on the other hand, no reason whatever can be assigned for any one's treating it as a fable, if he really did believe it.

When, then, we find Socrates and his disciples represented by Plato as fully admitting, in their discussion of the subject, that "men in general were highly incredulous as to the soul's future existence," and as expecting that "it would, at the moment of our natural death, be dispersed (as he expresses it) like air or smoke, and cease altogether to exist, so that it would require no little persuasion and argument to convince them that the soul can exist after death, and can retain any thing of its powers and intelligence;"—when we find this, I say, asserted, or rather alluded to, as notoriously the state of popular opinion, we can surely entertain but little doubt that the accounts of Elysium and Tartarus were regarded as mere poetical fables, calculated to amuse the imagination, but unworthy of serious belief.

Those who are not only firm believers in a real state of future existence, but familiar from childhood with the belief, are apt to understand much too strongly what the ancient poets say of the dream-like, shadowy sort of half-existence which they attribute to Elysium and Tartarus, and to the souls which inhabited those abodes. And there is the more difficulty in avoiding such a misinterpretation, because the more philosophical, clear, and precise *our* views are, the more we shall be likely to mistake theirs. A man of tolerably clear and cultivated understanding, knows very well, that every thing of which he can form a conception, either has a real existence independent of his mind, or has it not; that there is nothing intermediate between these two—no such state as half-existence;—that “substance does not admit of degrees;”<sup>1</sup> and that, consequently, if a man exist at all, he cannot exist more or less than another. And though *we* may be *uncertain* whether a particular man, or other Being, does really exist or not, a moment’s reflection shows us that this intermediate, uncertain state appertains only to *our minds*: the Being itself either has a real complete existence, or none at all. But loose, popular language, which is apt to impart to our thoughts a corresponding indistinctness, is continually tending to transfer to external objects what in reality belongs to the mind. We may find many, accordingly, even of those who are regarded as philosophical writers, speaking of “contingency” or “uncertainty” as denoting qualities of *events* themselves;<sup>2</sup> whereas the words denote merely the relation in which they stand to our knowledge. Whether a ship, for instance, has arrived, or will arrive, at a certain time, at her destined port in the Indies, is an uncertainty, and might be a fair subject of a wager, in England; though the former is a matter of certainty to those on the spot. Yet how much of the controversy between predestinarians and

---

<sup>1</sup> Arist. *Categ.*

<sup>2</sup> *Elements of Logic*: Appendix, article “Certain.”

their opponents, which has lasted so many ages, has gone on without either party perceiving (and often *in consequence* of their not perceiving) that the same thing may be both “contingent,” and “certain,” though not to the same person, at the same time.<sup>1</sup>

Universally, we are prone to form insensibly a habit of regarding objects and events, as themselves strictly corresponding with our views of them. Thus, if one of the ancient heathen thought, in his waking hours, or in his dreams, of some deceased friend, he would receive an impression of that person’s existence, more or less vivid, but far short of what he had received in a real personal interview. If such a man had reasoned philosophically on the subject, he would have perceived at once that his friend either did really exist, or did not; and that though he might exist in a thinner and less grossly material substance than formerly, and might be less an object of the senses of the survivors, still if his soul did exist at all, it must exist as really as ever; (just as things seen dimly in the twilight, are not in themselves the less substantial;) and if it did not, could no more be any real thing at all, than the monsters of a feverish dream.

But the generality were not so likely to reason accurately, as to resign themselves to their imagination; which would suggest the (strictly, impossible) idea, of attributing to the souls of the deceased a kind of existence analogous to their own indistinct conceptions;—a sort of intermediate condition between being, and not being, corresponding to the impression of a dream or a fancy; which is intermediate between the vivid impression produced by a real present object, and, no impression at all. What our senses or our reason assure us does exist, we regard as something really and properly existing; what we are in like manner assured does not exist, we regard as absolutely non-existent; and thence,

---

<sup>1</sup> See *Essay on Election*, Second Series, § 4.

what we are in doubt about, or have a faint perception of, we are led to regard (without reflecting and reasoning) as *almost* existing, and not quite.

And this kind of confused and indistinct notion, the ordinary expressions, in all languages, relative to dreams, rather tend to foster. We are accustomed to say, indifferently, either, "I *saw* so and so, in a dream," or, "I dreamed that I saw it:" and though both expressions are designed to convey the same meaning, the former of them, according to its strict sense, suggests (while the latter does not) the idea of a real object distinct from the mind: for that of which we can, properly, say, I saw it, we conceive to have a real existence.

That such was the origin, and such the character, of the ancient popular notions respecting a future state, is abundantly confirmed by the language of the poets; who perpetually compare the souls of the departed to *dreams*.<sup>1</sup> And the rewards and punishments of the future state, they represent as of the same dreamy and unsubstantial character:—as "only shadows dealt out to shadows;"<sup>2</sup> and, what is more remarkable still, as producing only a sort of shadowy and unreal enjoyment and suffering. The poet from whom so many were content to derive their creed, represents Achilles, among the shades, as declaring that the life of the meanest drudge on earth, is preferable to the very highest of the unsubstantial glories of Elysium.

Βουλοίμην κ' ἐπάρουρος ἐὼν θητεύεμεν ἄλλῃ

Ἀνδρὶ παρ' ἀκλήρῳ ᾧ μὴ βίωτος πολλὸς εἴη,

ἢ πᾶσιν νεκέεσσι καταφθιμένοισιν ἀνάσσειν.

It is remarkable too that the same poet seems plainly to regard the *body*, not the *soul*, as being properly "the man," after death has separated them. *We* should be apt to say

<sup>1</sup> Thus Virgil's "*Volucrique simillima somno*," &c.

<sup>2</sup> Bishop Hinds' *History of the Rise and Progress of Christianity*; Introduction.



that such a one's body is here, and that *he*, properly the person himself, is departed to the other world; but Homer uses the very opposite language in speaking of the heroes slain before Troy; viz. that their souls were despatched to the shades, and that **THEY** themselves were left a prey to dogs and birds.

Πολλὰς δ' ἰφθίμους ΨΥΧΑΣ αἶδι προΐαψεν  
'Ηρώων, ΑΛΤΟΥΣ δ' ἐὶ ἐλώρια τέυχε κύνεσσιν.<sup>1</sup>

§ 4 It may be thought, however, (though the supposition does not seem a probable one,) that the writers I have mentioned, mistook, or misrepresented, the opinions of their countrymen: let us turn to the records of matters of fact, as presented to us by an able and faithful historian, who possessed the amplest opportunities for obtaining information. The testimony of Thucydides, not as to the *professed* belief, but as to the conduct, of the Athenians, under those trying circumstances in which the near approach of death impresses the most forcibly the thought of a future state on the minds of those who expect it—his testimony, I say, as to their conduct on such an occasion, must alone prove almost decisive of the question. For it will hardly be denied, that those who firmly believe in a future state, or even regard it as a thing highly probable, however the pursuits and occupations of this world may have drawn off their attention from it, will be likely, when death evidently draws near—death,

<sup>1</sup> A curious instance of that kind of confusion of thought I have been speaking of, is afforded by those theological or ecclesiastical writers who reckon Barnabas among the "Apostolical Fathers," on the ground that an epistle is extant under his name, which is generally suspected, or more than suspected to be spurious. If they had been *quite sure* that Barnabas did write it, they would have reckoned it the work, not of an Apostolical Father, but of an undoubted Apostle; if again they

had been quite sure that Barnabas did *not* write it, they would not have applied to *him* any title or description having reference to the work: but their minds being in an intermediate state between the affirmative and negative conclusion, they adopted respecting Barnabas himself a sort of intermediate language, implying at once that he is, and that he is not, the Author. See Bishop Hinds' *History of the Rise and Progress of Christianity*.

not in the tumultuous ardour of battle, but in the calm, yet resistless, progress of disease—to think with lively and anxious interest of the life of another world. If they have any apprehensions at all of judgment to come, they will usually wish to “die the death of the righteous,” even though they may not have been willing to lead the life of the righteous. Even those who have been in some doubt respecting this truth, or who have studied to keep it out of sight, are generally found to believe in it the most firmly at that awful moment, when they would be most glad to disbelieve it; and then to think most of it, when the thought is the most intolerable.

It is not necessary for the present purpose to contend, that what has been just said constitutes a rule without exception; let it be admitted only as applying to the generality, or even to a considerable portion merely, of mankind; (and thus far at least we are surely borne out, both by reason and experience;) and let any one, with these principles before him, contemplate the picture drawn of the pestilence which ravaged Athens during the Peloponnesian war, by that judicious historian who was an eye-witness and a partaker of the calamity. Whether the ancient Poets, or Philosophers, be regarded as the better instructors in the doctrine of a future state, Athens had no deficiency in either: and a plague so wide-spreading, so irresistible, and which brought with it to those whom it seized (as we are expressly told) such an utter despair of recovery, may be fairly expected to have had the effect, in some minds at least, of awakening whatever belief, or even suspicion, they might have entertained respecting Tartarus and Elysium, and of calling into action their fears and hopes on the subject. We might expect to find *some* of them, at least, bewailing their sins, making reparation to those they had injured, and in every way striving to prepare for the judgment that seemed impending.

The very reverse took place. The historian tells us,

that "seeing death so near them, they resolved to make the most of life while it lasted, by setting at naught all laws divine and human, and eagerly plunging into every species of profligacy." Nor was this conduct by any means confined to the most vile and worthless of the community; for he complains of a general and permanent *depravation* of morals, which dated its origin from this calamity. Nor again does the description apply to such only as had been, either openly or secretly, contemnners of the whole system of the national religion; for we are told, that "at first many had recourse to the offices of their religion, with a view to appease the gods; but that when they found their sacrifices and ceremonies *availed nothing against the disease*, and that the pious and the impious alike fell victims to it, they at once concluded that piety and impiety were altogether indifferent, and cast off all religious and moral obligations." Is it not evident from this, that those who did reverence the gods, had been accustomed to look for none but *temporal* rewards and punishments from them? Can we conceive that men who expected that virtue should be rewarded, and vice punished, in the other world, would, just at their entrance into that world, *begin* to regard virtue and vice as indifferent?

It is but too true, indeed, that men have been found in countries where Christianity is professed, so hardened, as to manifest, even at the approach of death, no regard to the judgment which is to succeed it; who have availed themselves of present impunity for the commission of crimes, or have endeavoured to drown thought in sensual excess: but instances of this kind rather go to prove that such men do *not*, than that the heathen *did*, believe in a future retribution; if by belief is to be understood, not a mere unthinking assent, or a mere *non-denial*, of the doctrine, but a deliberate, firm, and habitual conviction. Such gross and complete ignorance is to be found in not a few of the lower orders in professedly Christian countries, that scarcely any idea whatever of reli-

gion has at any time entered their minds. If this assertion should appear, as it probably may to some of my readers, overcharged, or if they should suppose that instances of this kind must be, in this country at least, extremely rare, they may convince themselves but too easily of the deplorable truth either by inquiring of those, who in the discharge of their clerical functions have had opportunity to ascertain it, or by themselves examining such of the least educated among the lower orders (and many, I fear I may add, much above the lowest) who come in their way; among whom they will, I am convinced, meet with instances of persons growing up to maturity with scarcely any more knowledge or thought concerning the Christian religion, than the Hindoo mythology.

Those, again, who have long been hardened in habits of extreme profligacy, may ultimately become as blind to all ideas of a future state as if they had never heard of it; but experience as well as reason forbids us to believe, that, where the Gospel is assiduously preached, such a degree of ignorance, or of depravity, can ever be general, much less universal.

And, accordingly, it appears, that the great plague which desolated London produced, on the whole, an effect exactly opposite to that at Athens. Some abandoned wretches, no doubt, took the same advantage as the Athenians did, of the calamity; but the generality seem plainly to have shown that their belief of a future state, however it might have lain dormant during a time of apparent security, and however easily it might be thrown off on a return to such a state, was real and deep-rooted. No instances are recorded *there* of pious men *renouncing* their piety when they saw death approaching: on the contrary, serious devotion seems, for the most part, to have prevailed; and, if not reformation, at least alarm and contrition, to have been generally produced among sinners. Many are said, when attacked by the plague, to have even rushed into the public streets, con-

fessing aloud and bewailing crimes long ago committed, and never before imputed to them, and earnestly seeking to make reparation. Now, it may surely be presumed that instances of this kind, if they occurred at all, at Athens, must have been rare indeed; that no one such took place is the most probable inference; since none are recorded. The account, indeed, which the historian gives of the general depravity that supervened, is certainly not to be understood without exceptions; for he tells us that *some good* men retained their virtue, and displayed their humanity; but had any instances occurred of the *repentance* of *bad* men—of sinners alarmed into remorse for their guilt, and endeavouring to atone for it—such instances would have presented so striking a contrast to the general case, that we can hardly suppose a writer so accurate and intelligent, living on the spot, would have made no mention of them.

In Christian countries, on the contrary, however *imperfectly* Christian, in respect of many of the inhabitants of them, it is well known that instances of this kind are of daily occurrence, even when the ordinary course of human mortality is not accelerated by any remarkable visitation.

Can we, then, on comparing two such cases together, come to the conclusion, that in each, the notions respecting a future state were the same, or at all similar? Is not the inference obvious, that, at least the Athenians of that age, considered the accounts of a future life as no more than amusing fictions, of whose utter falsity there was no reason even to doubt? And accordingly, when Pericles is represented, by the same historian, as exhausting every topic of consolation, in his address to the friends of those who had fallen in battle,<sup>1</sup> he speaks of their glorious memory, and of the hope of other sons to be born, who may fill their place, and emulate their worth, but adds not one word of their future life and immortality.

---

<sup>1</sup> Thucyd. lib. ii. c. 35, *et seq.*

And that the prevailing belief, at other times, and in other states, Greek or Italian, was the same as at Athens at the period just spoken of, there is at least a strong presumption, till evidence of the contrary is produced. The Athenians were noted for their religious devotion; the popular mythology which prevailed among the other Grecian states, and, I may add, at Rome, was the same, or nearly the same, with theirs; and therefore may be presumed, in the absence of all proof to the contrary, to have had the same results in respect of the belief of a future life. Indeed, we find the younger Pliny,<sup>1</sup> in his account of the eruption of Vesuvius, in which his uncle perished, recording, among the striking events of that scene, the excitement of a feeling not unlike that of the Athenians in the plague—viz., a general distrust of divine aid, arising from the notion, that the gods themselves were possibly involved in the impending ruin.

The belief, then, of a life to come, though nominally professed, cannot be considered as practically forming any part of the creed of those ancient nations with whom we are best acquainted. Cicero acknowledges that the epistle of Sulpicius to him, on the death of Tullia, comprehended every argument for comfort which the case admitted; yet we find in it no allusion to the one topic, which would have been uppermost in the mind of a believer. It is no wonder, therefore, that when, at Athens, Paul came to speak of the resurrection of the dead, some of his hearers mocked; and that, when Festus heard of the resurrection from the dead, he exclaimed, "Paul, thou art beside thyself." So far, indeed, were the promulgators of Christianity from finding the belief of a future state already well established, that they appear to have had no small difficulty in convincing of this truth even some of their converts. Some of those who denied a *resurrection*, may, indeed, with good reason, be

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* lib. ii. Ep. 20.

supposed to have looked for some other kind of future existence; but when Paul finds it necessary to urge, “if *in this life only we have hope* in Christ, we are of all men most miserable—let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we die,”<sup>1</sup> it is plain he must have been opposing such as expected *nothing* beyond the grave. And when he exhorts the Thesalonians not to sorrow for the deceased, “even as *the rest*,<sup>2</sup> [of mankind] who have *no hope*,” we have the testimony, if we will receive it, of one who knew better than we can, as to the real sentiments of the heathen on this point.

§ 5 It may be said, however, (and this perhaps is the most prevailing notion,) that little as the vulgar believed in the doctrine of a future state, it was received and inculcated by many eminent Philosophers. Now that a truth of the highest importance to all mankind alike should be discovered by a few, and confined to them, would be, even if the fact were fully established, no very great triumph of human reason. But, in reality, the doctrine never was either generally admitted among the ancient philosophers, or satisfactorily proved by any of them, even in the opinion of those who argued in favour of it. On the one hand, not only the Epicurean school openly contended against it, but one of much greater weight than any of them, and the founder of a far more illustrious sect, Aristotle, without expressly combating the notion of a future state, does much more; he passes it by as not worth considering, and takes for granted the contrary supposition, as not needing proof. He remarks incidentally, in his treatise on courage, that

---

<sup>1</sup> Thus Catullus :

Vivamus mea Lesbia, atque amemus,  
 Rumoresque senum severiorum,  
 Omnes unius æstimemus assis,  
 Soles occidere et redire possunt :  
 NOBIS cum semel occidit brevis lux,  
 NOX EST PERPETUA, UNA DORMIENDA.

<sup>2</sup> Οἱ ἄλλοι.

“death is formidable beyond most other evils, on account of its excluding hope; since it is a complete termination, and there does not appear to be *any thing either of good or evil* beyond it.”<sup>1</sup> And in the same work, in discussing the question whether a man can justly be pronounced happy before the end of his life, he proceeds all along (as indeed is the case throughout) on the supposition, that after death a man ceases altogether to exist.<sup>2</sup> And it should be observed, that his incidental and oblique allusion to this latter opinion, implies (as I have said) much more than if he had expressly asserted and maintained it; in *that* case he would have borne testimony only to his *own* belief; but as it is, we may collect from his mode of speaking that such was the *prevailing*, and generally uncontradicted, belief of the rest of the world.

Of those philosophers again, who contended for a future state, it is to be observed, not only that, as Dr. Paley remarks, they did not, properly speaking, effect a *discovery*; “it was only one guess among many: he only discovers, who proves;” but also, that (as has been said above) their arguments did not fully succeed in convincing even themselves. Those which at one time they bring forward as decisive proof, they seem at another time to regard as hardly possessing that degree of probability, which, now that the doctrine is established, most are ready to allow to them. Cicero especially, who is frequently appealed to on this question, we find distinctly acknowledging, at least in the person of one of his disputants, that though, while he is reading the *Phædo*, he feels disposed to assent to the reasons urged in favour of a future state, his conviction vanishes as soon as he lays down the book, and revolves the matter in his own thoughts; which was the feeling probably with which the author himself had

---

<sup>1</sup> Arist. *Eth. Nicom.* b. iii.

<sup>2</sup> Arist. *Eth. Nicom.* b. i. See note (A) at the end of this Essay.



written it.<sup>1</sup> Many indeed of the deistical writers of modern times have come to much more decisive conclusions on this and also on many other points, than the ancients did, and indeed than are fairly warranted by any arguments which unassisted reason can supply; but this only affords a presumption of the powerful, though unacknowledged and perhaps unperceived, influence which the Gospel revelation has exercised even on the minds of those who reject it: they have drunk at that stream of knowledge, which they cannot, or will not, trace to the real source from which it flows.

Supposing however those of the ancient philosophers, who maintained a future state, to have been more fully convinced themselves of the conclusions they respectively arrived at, than it appears they really were, it is evidently necessary to inquire in the next place, what those conclusions were, and on what proofs they rested. The arguments commonly employed by them, (and also by such deists of the present day as admit the doctrine,) viz. the distinct nature of the soul from the corruptible body with which it is united—the vigour and energy which the soul sometimes manifests when the body is in the lowest state of exhaustion, &c., led them naturally to the inference, that the soul will continue to exist after death in a *separate* state, never to be re-united with matter. They represented the body as a kind of prison of the spiritual part, from which it was to be released by death; and the soul accordingly would energize, they supposed, more freely, and enjoy the happiness of more exalted contemplation, when freed from its connexion with gross material substance.

To this it was replied, that the body seems rather the

---

<sup>1</sup> Not that this inconsistency in their writings arose from a corresponding hesitation and vacillation in their opinions; but evidently from the circumstance that most of them, except the Epicureans, judged it necessary to keep

the vulgar in awe, by the terrors of another world; which accordingly they very gravely set forth, and insist on in their popular (exoteric) works. See note (B) at the end of this Essay.

necessary organ of the soul, than its prison; that the effects frequently produced by external injuries, by the administration of certain drugs, and by several, though not all, bodily diseases, sufficiently shew the dependence of the mental functions on the body; and that the perceptive powers of the mind, which are the main source of our knowledge, must apparently lie dormant, without the intervention of the bodily senses:<sup>1</sup> “how,” said they, “can the soul enjoy, when the eye and the ear, for instance, are destroyed, those perceptions which are furnished by sight and hearing?” The whole argument is detailed in Lucretius with considerable ingenuity; and though he goes much too far, in thence concluding that the soul *cannot possibly* exist in an active and perceptive state without the body—much more, when he contends that it cannot exist at all, (for how can we tell that *other* means of perception, such as we have no notion of, may not be substituted?)—still it must be admitted, that he leaves the question in a doubtful state, and reduces the opposite conclusion to no more, at the utmost, than a faint probability. At least, nothing more can be fairly claimed for it, till some more satisfactory answer (drawn from reason, independent of revelation) can be given to the above objections, than any that has hitherto appeared.

A well-known argument by illustration, which has been employed on this subject, will be found on examination to be less solid than ingenious. If we suppose, it has been said, a person to have been kept from his birth in a dark

---

<sup>1</sup> Some writers are accustomed to adduce instances of great mental energy remaining in the midst of bodily decay, unimpaired even up to the moment of dissolution, as a proof of the mind's independence on the body. But surely this is a very incorrect way of reasoning: especially when the cases brought forward are manifestly exceptions to the general rule. To prove that the mental

faculties are not dependent on *every* part of the bodily organization, does not authorize us to conclude that they are connected with *no* part of it: a disease may attack a vital part of the bodily system, and yet leave unhurt to the last those parts (supposing there are such) which are connected with the exercise of the mental powers.

cave, which admits a portion of light, and a partial view of external objects, only through an aperture in the wall that closes its entrance, would he not, thus accustomed to receive all his perceptions through that aperture, suppose that this loop-hole is essential to them, and that if it were destroyed, he should be left in total obscurity? yet we know, that if the wall were pulled down, and the whole cave thrown open, he would enjoy a fuller light and a much wider prospect. Even so, we, it is urged, who are accustomed to receive all our perceptions through the medium of the bodily senses, are apt to suppose, though with no better reason, that the destruction of the body would leave us without the means of perception; whereas, in fact, the soul might then be released, as it were, from a cave, and enjoy a wider sphere of intelligence and of activity.

There is a speciousness in this illustration, very likely to captivate a superficial inquirer; but in fact, if it proves any thing at all, it militates against the conclusion drawn from it. The fallacy consists in overlooking, (what is commonly overlooked in many similar cases, into which much error and confusion of thought are thus introduced,) that an *aperture* is a *negative* idea, implying merely the *absence* of a certain portion of opaque matter. The supposed person in the cave, therefore, would not in reality be at all mistaken in his notions and expectations; for he supposes, not that the *opaque* substance of the sides of the cave is necessary to his perceptions, but, on the contrary, that the *interruption* or absence of that opaque body is so: in which he would be perfectly right: as he would also be, in supposing that the destruction of that aperture would put an end to his perception: since that destruction would be, properly, the *closing* of the aperture; not the throwing down of the walls, which would, in truth, be an *enlargement* of it.

Now the body and the bodily senses being evidently not merely negative ideas, the destruction of them bears no analogy whatever to the supposed destruction of the cave;

since that cave itself was never imagined to be, to the person enclosed, (as the bodily senses are to us,) the means of conveying knowledge, but, on the contrary, as far as it extends, of excluding it.

The question then is left, as I have said, by unaided Reason in a doubtful state. To the Christian, indeed, all this doubt would be instantly removed, if he found that the immortality of the soul, as a disembodied Spirit, were revealed to him in the word of God. He cannot question the power of the great Creator to prolong, in any way He may see fit, the life He originally gave; but this is very different from arriving at the conclusion by the evidence which unassisted reason can supply.

In fact, however, no such doctrine *is* revealed to us; the Christian's hope, as founded on the promises contained in the Gospel, is, the resurrection of the *body*; <sup>1</sup> a doctrine which seems never to have occurred (nor indeed was likely to occur, from any contemplation of the change from night to day, and from summer to winter) to any of the heathen. Indeed, when any of them are struck by, and notice, any phenomenon in nature that has the appearance of a *revival*, they are struck by it as a *contrast* to the supposed fate of man. Thus we find a Greek poet, in bewailing a departed friend, lamenting, that while the herbs of the garden, which appear dead, shoot up in the succeeding spring, man, on the contrary, who appears a Being of so much greater dignity, when dead, is doomed to live no more.<sup>2</sup>

"The meanest herb we trample in the field,  
Or in the garden nurture, when its leaf  
In autumn dies, forebodes another Spring,  
And from brief slumber wakes to life again.  
Man wakes no more: Man, peerless, valiant, wise,  
Once chilled by death, sleeps hopeless in the dust,  
A long, unbroken, never-ending sleep."

GISBORNE.

<sup>1</sup> See note (C) at the end of this Essay.

<sup>2</sup> Ὅπότε πρᾶτα θάνωμεν, ἀνάκοι ἐν χθονὶ κοίλῃ  
Εὐδομεν εὖ μάλα μακρὸν, ΑΤΕΡΜΟΝΑ, ΝΗΓΡΕΤΟΝ ὕπνον.

Mosch. *Epit. Bionis*.

As, however, even the faintest conjecture of a future existence, though it must not be confounded with a full assurance of it, is, as far as it goes, an approximation towards the knowledge of truth, so, also, notions considerably incorrect respecting that existence, if they are but such as to involve the idea of enjoyment or suffering, corresponding with men's conduct<sup>1</sup> in this life, have so far something of a just foundation, and of a tendency to practical utility. This, however, appears by no means to have been the case with the systems of any, as far as we can learn, of those ancient philosophers, who contended the most strenuously for the immortality of the soul. For not only do they seem to have agreed, that no suffering could be expected by the wicked in another life, on the ground that the gods were incapable of anger, and therefore could not punish;<sup>2</sup> but the very notion of the soul's immortality, as explained by them, involved the complete destruction of distinct personal existence. Their notion was (I mean, when they spoke their real sentiments; for in their *exoteric* or popular works they often inculcate, for the benefit of the vulgar, the doctrine of future retribution, which they elsewhere laugh at,) that the soul of each man is a portion of that Spirit which pervades the Universe,<sup>3</sup> to which it is reunited at death, and becomes again an undistinguishable part of the great whole; just as the body is resolved into the general mass of matter.<sup>4</sup> So that their immortality, or rather eternity, of the soul, was anterior as well as posterior; as it was to have no end, so it had no beginning; and the boasted continuance of existence, which according to this system we are to expect after death, consists in returning to

---

<sup>1</sup> I mean, *virtuous* and *vicious* conduct respectively; else the doctrine may even do harm instead of good. See § 9.

<sup>2</sup> Cic. *de Off.* lib. iii. chap. 28, &c., &c.

<sup>3</sup> See note (D) at the end of this Essay.

<sup>4</sup> "Whatever there is," says Cicero, (*Fragm. de Consolatione*), "that perceives, that exercises judgment, that wills, is of celestial nature, and *divine*; and for that reason it must of necessity be eternal."

the *state in which we were before birth* ; which, every one must perceive, is the same thing, virtually, with annihilation.

Let it be remembered then, when the arguments of the heathen Sages are triumphantly brought forward in proof of the soul's immortality, that when they countenanced the doctrine of future retribution, they taught, with a view to political expediency, what they did not themselves believe; and that when they spoke their real sentiments on the subject, the eternity of existence which they expected, as it implied the destruction of all distinct personality, amounted, practically, to nothing at all.

§ 6 It is not unlikely, that in thus depreciating the power of unassisted reason to ascertain the truth of a future life, I shall be suspected of favouring some opinions against which much clamour has been raised, viz. that the Soul is naturally mortal—incapable of an existence continued after our dissolution, except from the express decree of the Creator; and that it is a Material Substance, or an Attribute of Matter.

It were to be wished that those who have agitated these questions (and indeed many others) had begun by distinctly ascertaining what they were disputing about: which neither of the parties appears to have attended to. For my own part I must frankly acknowledge, that I do not understand the questions. If, by “nature” is meant the course in which the Author and Governor of all things proceeds in his works, (which is the only meaning I am able to attach to it,) then, to say that the souls of men, if God has appointed that they shall exist for ever, are naturally immortal, is not only an undeniable, but an identical proposition: it is only saying that the appointments of Omnipotence will surely take effect. If on the other hand, when it is said that the Soul is naturally mortal, nothing more is meant than that its existence is maintained after death solely by the agency of divine power; this also I should be disposed not only fully to admit, but to extend to our present existence also; “for in God we

live, and move, and have our being:" I cannot myself conceive what are called *physical causes* to possess *power*, in the strict sense of the word;<sup>1</sup> or to be capable of maintaining, more than of first producing, the system of the universe; whose continued existence, no less than its origin, seems to me to depend on the continual operation of the great Creator. The Laws of Nature, as they are called, presuppose (as Dr. Paley remarks) an Agent; since they are "the modes in which that Agent operates;" they cannot be the cause of their own observance.

The principles here touched upon (which it would be foreign to the present purpose to explain and defend) may, I am aware, be disputed by many who are far from having any leaning towards atheism; but that they are at all of a mischievous tendency, even if erroneous, can hardly be contended by any one of the smallest degree of candour.

The question again respecting the Materiality of the soul, is one which I am also at a loss to understand clearly, till it shall have been clearly determined *what matter is*. We know nothing of it, any more than of Mind, except its

---

<sup>1</sup> It is a remarkable circumstance that both in the Greek and Latin languages, nouns of the neuter gender, *i. e.* considered as denoting *things*, and not *persons*, (for though many, really, inanimate objects were expressed by masculine and feminine nouns, they were personified by the very circumstance of sex being attributed to them,) invariably had the *nominative* and *accusative* the same; or rather, may be said to have had an accusative only, employed as a nominative when the grammatical construction required it; for the nominative, so called, of neuter nouns, corresponds to the *accusative* (if to any case) of masculines; *e. g.* the accusative of "dominus" is "dominum;" and accordingly, under the same declension we have "regn-um," both nominative and accu-

sative. A rule of this kind, extending without exception to several declensions, and both numbers, in two languages, can hardly be a mere accident. May it not have arisen from an indistinct consciousness that a *person* only can really be an *agent*; a mere thing, being, in truth, only *acted upon*? And may not the same cause have led to the practice, in Greek, of joining a neuter plural with a verb in the singular?

I throw out this suggestion with a full expectation that by many it will be derided as fanciful; but they cannot deny that the *phenomenon exists*, and must have *some cause*; and it must be allowed that at least the most *decisive* objection to any proposed solution of it, is, to offer a better.

Attributes; and (let it not be forgotten) the most remarkable of these are not ascertained. Whether Gravitation be an essential quality of matter is still a question, and likely to remain so, among natural philosophers; who accordingly are divided in opinion whether those commonly called *imponderable* Substances, Heat, Light, and Electricity, are Substances at all, or not. At any rate, let not the truths of Religion be rested on any decision respecting subtle questions which belong to the Natural-philosopher or the Metaphysician, not the Theologian; nor let our hopes in God's promises be mixed up with debates about Extension, and Gravitation, and Form. The Scriptures in these points leave us just where they found us; giving no explanation of the nature of the Soul, but giving us instead, what is far more important, an assurance that we are destined to live for ever. That this is *impossible*, and that no revelation is to be received, however attested, which contains this doctrine, we may be assured no metaphysical arguments will ever prove; and it is, on the other hand, I think, equally out of the power of metaphysical arguments to prove the contrary;—to establish, without the aid of divine revelation, the *certainty* of a future immortality: for if otherwise, whence is it that the wisest of men, when fairly left to themselves, never did arrive at the conclusion, by any arguments which were satisfactory even to themselves? For it should not be forgotten, among other considerations, that none of those who contend for the natural immortality of the Soul, on the ground of its distinct nature from the Body,—its incapability of decomposition, &c. have been able to extricate themselves from one difficulty, viz. that all their arguments apply, with exactly the same force, to prove an immortality not only of *brutes*, but even of *plants*; though in such a conclusion as this, they were never willing to acquiesce.

Let it be observed, however, once more, that the full *assurance* of man's immortality is what is here spoken of; which must be carefully distinguished from probable *con-*



*jecture.* It is not denied that arguments have been adduced in favour of this conclusion, which may have been, more or less, convincing to many; some of which are justly regarded as possessing considerable weight; and others have been reckoned such, though perhaps without sufficient grounds. It must not be forgotten, however, that most men are very incompetent judges of the force of any argument which tends to a conclusion of which they are already well assured; and are prone to consider as perfectly clear and decisive, such a train of reasoning as would never have prevailed with themselves, if proposed to them while in a state of doubt. When Columbus had discovered the New World, he found men (according to the well-known anecdote told of him) who thought it easy to prove beyond a doubt, *à priori*, that such a country must exist; but they forgot that they had not seen the force of these arguments till the discovery had been made.

Of the arguments just alluded to, that which proceeds on the disorder and irregularity apparent in the present world, and the necessity of a future state of retribution, to vindicate the divine justice, would be indeed most satisfactory, if it involved a solution of the great and perplexing question (intimately connected with it) respecting the origin of Evil: but though it may seem to remove the difficulty one step further off, it does not in any degree explain or lessen it;<sup>1</sup> the expectation that at the day of harvest the tares shall be rooted up and burnt, does not at all explain why they were allowed to be sown among the wheat. That there *are* wicked men, experience teaches us; and that they shall be punished, the Scriptures teach us; nor is there any ground for cavilling

---

<sup>1</sup> The Scriptures, it should be observed, leave the question concerning the origin of evil just where they find it: Revelation neither *introduces* the difficulty, as some weak opponents contend; nor clears it up, and accounts for

it, as is imagined by some not less weak advocates.

I have entered into a fuller discussion of this point in the Appendix, No. 2, to the last edition of Dr. King's *Sermon on Predestination*.

at this doctrine, since it involves no *greater* difficulty than the other, which we cannot but admit; but it does not *explain* the fact; nor are we therefore authorized to infer, *à priori*, independent of Revelation, a future state of retribution, from the irregularities prevailing in the present life; since that future state does not account fully for those irregularities. It may explain indeed how present evil may be conducive to future good; but not, why the good could not be attained without the evil: it may reconcile with our notions of the divine justice, the present prosperity of the wicked; but it does not account for the existence of the wicked.

There is much more weight in the argument, that Man (at least, civilized and cultivated Man) not only is capable of a continued course of improvement, which must be cut short by death, but also has a painful apprehension of this, and a disposition to entertain hopes and fears respecting something after death; and that, consequently, on the supposition of no future state, the Brutes, who enjoy the present moment without any apprehensions and anxieties about futurity, and who arrive at once at the perfection of their nature, must be much better off than man, and much better fitted for their condition than we are for ours, since our Rational Nature thus forms an impediment to our satisfaction. Since, therefore, such a constitution of things would be a manifest exception to the general course of nature, inasmuch as, in all other cases, each Being seems admirably adapted to the kind of existence to which it is destined, the inference drawn is, that the present life is not likely to be the whole of man's existence.

This argument, though it can scarcely be considered as decisive, possesses, as has been said, a considerable degree of probability: but it should be observed, that, allowing the utmost force both to this argument and to the one above mentioned, though they lead to the inference of a future *state*

*of existence*, yet they have little, if any, force in proving a future *immortality*. And it is remarkable, that the northern mythology of our Teutonic ancestors (how far it obtained sincere acceptance, we have no sufficient means of judging) represented the glories enjoyed by the brave in the hall of Odin, as of long continuance, indeed, but destined to have an end, and to last only

“Till Lok shall burst his seven-fold chain,  
And Night resume her ancient reign ;”

when the gods themselves, with all the heroes who were the objects of their favour, should be overpowered by their adversaries, and finally annihilated. And the Grecian mythology also represented the happiness of Elysium as of limited duration.

§ 7 The case of the Jews evidently presents a distinct question, inasmuch as they did possess a divine revelation. The supposition that *they* were acquainted, through that revelation, with the doctrine of a future state, does not militate with the conclusion, that *unassisted reason* is inadequate to the discovery ; but it certainly is at variance with the full and literal acceptance of the assertion, that “Jesus Christ brought life and immortality to light through the Gospel.”

That the Mosaic law did contain the revelation in question, has been maintained, as is well known, by many learned men ; and the illustrious author of *The Divine Legation* has been assailed by many of them, with much acrimony, for denying that position. It has been contended, that it is “*derogatory to God’s honour, and injurious to the Mosaic dispensation, &c.* to acknowledge no revelation of a future state in the Law :” and expressions like these may, perhaps, afford a clue to the origin of the opinion held by those who use them. For it is probable, that it is the cavils, actual or apprehended, of infidels, against so important an omission in the communication made to God’s favoured people, that have

contributed mainly to suggest a reply which consists in a *denial of the fact* of such omission: a defence, unfortunately, which gives a great apparent advantage to the adversary, by enabling him to cavil, with much better reason, at the very inadequate manner in which this purpose was accomplished—at the few, and scanty, and obscure intimations of the doctrine, which the Law contains, even admitting every text which has ever been adduced on that side of the question, to be interpreted in the manner most favourable to it.

And this argument, if duly considered, will be found of such weight, as to amount, in fairness, to a decision of the question; to prove, that is, not, of course, that Moses was an impostor, but that, on the supposition of his *not* being such—in other words, of his being divinely inspired—he could not have been commissioned to inculcate the doctrine of a future state.

For, let it be considered, in the first place, that, as the condition of the departed is *unseen*, and as the rewards and punishments of a future life are not only comparatively *remote*, but also must be considered as of a nature very *different* from any thing we can have experienced; from all these causes, it is found necessary that the most repeated assurances and admonitions should be employed, even towards those who have received the doctrine on the most satisfactory authority. A Christian minister, accordingly, in these days, finds that his hearers require to be perpetually reminded of this truth, to which they have long since given their assent; and that even, with all the pains he takes to inculcate it, in every different mode, he is still but very partially successful in drawing off men's attention from the things of this world, and fixing it on the "*unseen things, that are eternal.*" Much more must this have been the case with the Israelites whom Moses was addressing, who were so dull and gross-minded, so childishly short-sighted and sensual, that even the immediate miraculous presence of God among them, of whose judgments and deliverances they

had been eye-witnesses, was insufficient to keep them steady in their allegiance to Him. Even the temporal sanctions of the Law,—the plenty and famine,—the victory and defeat, and all the other points of that alternative of worldly prosperity and adversity which was set before them—things in their nature so much more easily comprehended by an unthinking and barbarous people, and so much more suited to their tastes—it was found necessary to detail with the utmost minuteness, and to repeat and remind them of, in the most impressive manner, in a vast number of different passages.<sup>1</sup>

Is not, then, the conclusion inevitable, that, if to such a people, the doctrine of future retribution had been to be revealed, or any traditional knowledge of it confirmed, we should have found it still more explicitly stated, and still more frequently repeated? And when, instead of anything like this, we have set before us a few scattered texts, which, it is contended, allude to or imply this doctrine, can it be necessary even to examine whether they are rightly so interpreted? Surely it is a sufficient reply to say, that if Moses had intended to inculcate such a doctrine, he would have clearly stated and dwelt on it in almost every page. Nor is it easy to conceive, how any man of even ordinary intelligence, and not blinded by devoted attachment to an hypothesis, can attentively peruse the books of the Law, abounding, as they do, with such copious descriptions of the temporal rewards and punishments (in their own nature so palpable) which sanctioned that Law, and with such earnest admonitions grounded on that sanction, and yet can bring himself seriously to believe, that the doctrine of a state of retribution after death, which it cannot be contended is even mentioned, however slightly, in more than a very few passages, formed a part of the Mosaic revelation.

And if any one, from a mistaken zeal to vindicate the

---

<sup>1</sup> See Note (E), at the end of this Essay.

honour of God's Law against infidels, persists in maintaining that this *was* intended, how will he reply to the cavil they will immediately raise, against the glaringly inadequate way of fulfilling such an intention? Thus it is, that when men rashly presume to distort the plain meaning of Scripture, for the sake of defending our religion against unsound objections, they expose it to more powerful ones, which they have left themselves without the means of answering.

An unwise attempt to combat Socinian doctrines also, has probably contributed to produce the same bias in the minds of some, whose abilities and learning would else have led them to judge more fairly of the sense of Scripture. When it is urged against Socinians, that on their hypothesis, which explains away the doctrine of the Atonement into a mere figure of speech, the Gospel-revelation would seem to be of little or no importance, they usually reply, that it established the belief of future retribution. The ready answer to this appears to be, that this belief was already taught in the Old Testament; an assertion which some of the opponents of Socinianism have accordingly undertaken to establish; in conformity with the too common practice, of eagerly catching at any argument which seems to bear against an adversary, without stopping to inquire first whether it is well-founded. And this carelessness about Truth seldom fails to be in the end injurious to its cause. In the present case, for instance, the Socinian may immediately reply, "You have furnished a decisive refutation of the doctrine that eternal life is procured by the Sacrifice of Christ, and is offered us only through faith in his Atonement; since to the Jews, certainly, the efficacious sufferings of the Messiah were not revealed; at least, not so as to be understood by the mass of the People; to whom therefore eternal life must have been held out (if at all, as you contend it was) as the direct reward of obedience. The conclusion therefore is inevitable, that unless what

Moses taught was false, your account of the Gospel must be false."

§ 8 Although, however, it has not been deemed necessary here to examine all the passages in the Book of Moses which have been interpreted as relating to a future state, it will be needful to say a few words respecting that one which is cited by our Lord himself against the Sadducees, in proof of the doctrine: "Now that the dead are raised," says He, "even Moses sheweth at the bush,<sup>1</sup> when he saith, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob; He is not the God of the dead, but of the living, for all live unto Him;" and, for not having drawn this inference, He charges them with "not knowing the Scriptures:" whence it has very rashly been concluded, that the Scriptures He alluded to were intended to *reveal* this doctrine. But can any man of common sense seriously believe, that such a passage as the one before us (which we may suppose was selected by our Lord as at least one of those most to the purpose) could be sufficient to make known to a rude and unthinking people, such as the Israelites when Moses addressed them, the strange and momentous truth, that the "dead are raised?"—that one of the most important parts of the revelation given them (which it must have been, if it were *any* part of it) could have been left to rest on an oblique and incidental implication, while the far simpler and more obvious doctrine of temporal rewards and punishments, was so plainly and so laboriously inculcated?<sup>2</sup> But, in fact, our Lord's declaration by no means amounts to this; the Sadducees of his time *had heard* of the doctrine;<sup>3</sup> no matter from what quarter; and their part evidently was, to examine patiently and candidly

<sup>1</sup> "At the bush:" this seems to have been the usual mode of reference to any particular passage of Scripture, before the division into chapters and verses was introduced.

<sup>2</sup> It should be observed that the argument deduced from this passage, seems to have struck our Lord's hearers by its *novelty*.

<sup>3</sup> See Hawkins on *Tradition*, p. 66.

whether it were true or not; and this, especially, by a careful study of the sacred books which they acknowledged, in order to judge whether it were conformable to these, or not.

But a passage, which may be decisive of a certain question, when consulted *with a view to that question*, may be utterly insufficient for the far different purpose of *making known*, in the first instance, the truth which it thus *confirms*. The error of confounding together these two things, gives rise to numberless mistakes in other points besides the one now before us. In fact, it is this very fallacy which has principally misled men throughout, with respect to the general question we are considering, as well as in many other doctrines of our religion.<sup>1</sup> Human reason is considered as sufficiently strong to *discover* the doctrine of a future state, because when the doctrine has been *proposed* to our belief by revelation, it perceives probabilities in favour of it: and the same with many other doctrines also. And thus it is, that a system of what is called Natural Religion is dressed up, as it were, with the spoils of revelation; and is made, such as men, when fairly left to themselves, and actually guided by the light of nature alone, never did attain to. And then, this Natural Religion is made by some the standard by which they interpret the declarations of Scripture; which is, in fact, correcting an original from an incorrect and imperfect transcript.<sup>2</sup>

It would be tedious, and, after what has been said, I trust, unnecessary, to cite, as might easily be done, a multitude of passages from the Old Testament, in which a reference to the expectations of a future state would have been apposite, and almost inevitable, had the belief of such a doctrine prevailed;<sup>3</sup> or to examine those few texts in the

<sup>1</sup> "Nam neque tam est acris acies in naturis hominum et ingeniis, ut res tantas quisquam, nisi monstratas, possit videre; neque tanta tamen in rebus obscuritas, ut eas non penitus, acri vir ingenio,

cernat, si modo adspexerit." Cic. *de Orat.* lib. iii. c. 31.

<sup>2</sup> See Dr. Hinds' valuable treatise on the *Inspiration of Scripture*.

<sup>3</sup> See Isaiah xxxviii. 18, 19, &c.



New as well as the Old Testament which have been brought forward to prove that a future state was revealed to the Jews. The sixth book of Warburton's *Divine Legation* contains a copious and learned discussion on this part of the subject; but no one can enter into such an examination, with any thing like a full and fair view of the question, who does not completely embrace, and steadily keep in mind, the argument already adduced, and on which the conclusion mainly rests; viz. that an unthinking and uncultivated people, such as the Israelites whom Moses addressed, must have needed, if it had been designed to reveal to them a future state, (or even to confirm and establish such a doctrine already received,) that it should be perpetually repeated,<sup>1</sup> and inculcated in the most copious and the clearest manner; that, consequently, since this is not done, it must be considered as, at least, highly improbable that such a revelation to them should have been intended; and that therefore, in the case of any doubtful passages, which will admit of, but do not absolutely require, an interpretation favourable to the affirmative side, (which is the one our own habits of thought would naturally at first suggest,) a different interpretation must be allowed to be, antecedently, more probable.

§ 9 Why Moses was not commissioned to reveal this momentous truth, is a question that cannot fail to occur to one who is pursuing such an inquiry as the present. It is a

---

<sup>1</sup> All admit that Moses *does* hold out, and dwell upon, temporal promises and threatenings: but the *frequency* and earnestness with which he enforces this sanction (and on that it is that the present argument turns) is often underrated; few being accustomed to read the books of the Law straight through; and those who do so, being of course inclined to pass over slightly any passage which plainly appears to be merely

a repetition of what had been before said; whereas it is this very repetition that is the most important for the present purpose. I have accordingly subjoined (Note (E) at the end of this Essay) all these passages; that the reader may be enabled to estimate the more easily their extraordinary number and copiousness. See *Lessons on the History of Religious Worship*, Lesson iii. § 2.

question which we are not competent completely to answer; because we cannot presume to explain why the Gospel, which "brought life and immortality to light," was reserved for that precise period at which it was proclaimed. But, *that* inquiry—why a different and more imperfect dispensation was needful to prepare the way for the Gospel,—being waived, as one surpassing man's knowledge and powers, it is easy to perceive, that the revelation of the doctrine in the Mosaic law, would have been neither necessary nor proper. It was not necessary, for the purpose of affording a sanction to the law of Moses, because the Israelites alone, of all the nations of the world, were under an *extraordinary* providence, distributing *temporal* rewards and judgments according to their conduct. The necessary foundation therefore of all religion, "that God is a *rewarder* of them that diligently seek him," did not require, as it must in all other nations, the belief in a future retribution, to remedy all the irregularities of God's ordinary providence, which, among this peculiar people, did not exist, at least, in the same degree and form as among all others.<sup>1</sup> Nor, again, would it have been proper for Moses, commissioned as he was to promulgate, not the Gospel, but the Law, to proclaim *that* life and immortality which the Gospel (as had been, no doubt, revealed to *him*) was destined to "bring to light;" much less, to represent eternal happiness as attainable *otherwise* than through the redemption by Christ, which the Gospel holds out as the only efficacious means of procuring it.<sup>2</sup>

On this last point, a few observations will be offered presently; but in the meantime it may be remarked, that

---

<sup>1</sup> See a discourse on *National Blessings and Judgments*, delivered before the University, and published together with four others, and also separately.

<sup>2</sup> See Note (F) at the end of this Essay. Had eternal life been offered as the reward of obedience to the law,

so that the mission of Christ served only to *relax* the terms of the covenant, in favour of those who transgressed the Law, surely the apostle Paul's expression would have been, (the very reverse of what he uses,) "For what then serveth the GOSPEL? it was *added because of transgressions*."

the slight hints of this doctrine which the books of the prophets contain,—the faint dawnings, as it were, of a scheme, which was to bring “life and immortality to light,”—and which appear more and more bright as they approached the period of that more perfect revelation, are in perfect consistency with the rule I have supposed Moses to have observed; since it is in proportion as they gave more and more clear notices of the Redeemer to come, and in almost constant conjunction with their descriptions of his mission, that the immortal life, to which He was to open the road and lead the way, is alluded to by the prophets; and also, in proportion as the *extraordinary* and regular administration of divine government in this world, by which the law had been originally sanctioned, and under which the Jews had hitherto lived, was gradually withdrawn. That it was in these writings, and not in those of Moses, that the Jews must have sought for indications of a future state, is strongly confirmed by the opinion of that celebrated and learned divine, Joseph Mede, who declares that he cannot tell on what Scripture authority the Jewish Church could found their belief in a future state, except the well-known passage in Daniel: (chap. xii. ver. 2.) and even of that it may be observed, that it does not necessarily imply a resurrection of *all* men. Doubtless it did not escape Mede, that there are in the other prophets many allusions to a future state, which were so understood by the inspired authors themselves; as they are by us *Christian* readers; but it does not follow that the great mass of the people—any besides the studious and discerning few—would be able clearly to perceive such meaning; especially when a different interpretation of those very passages applicable to temporal deliverances, might, without destroying their sense, be adopted. Nothing appears to us more evident, than the description in Isaiah, for instance, of a *suffering* Messiah; yet we well know, that a prosperous and triumphant temporal prince was generally expected by the Jews; and that the frustration of this

hope was the grand stumbling-block of the unbelieving among them.

So also, many passages of the prophets, which convey to Christians, who have enjoyed the Gospel-revelation, the intimation of a future state, (at least in their secondary sense,) might very easily be otherwise understood; or, at least, might appear not decisive, to those who lived before Jesus Christ had "*abolished death*, and brought life and immortality to light through the Gospel."

One passage there is, which is commonly understood by Christians, as having reference to the Resurrection, but which I cannot conceive to have been so designed by the writer. In the well-known passage of the Book of Job, "I know that my Redeemer liveth," &c.; by the "Redeemer," Christians usually understand the Lord Jesus, and by "the latter day," the Day of Judgment. The other interpretation of the words, which would refer them to the deliverance (shortly after recorded) of Job from his afflictions, and his restoration to health and prosperity, is less likely to occur to a Christian reader who takes the passage as an insulated sentence apart from the rest of the Book. But this latter is the only interpretation that is at all consistent with all that had gone before, and with the general drift of the work. Job is represented as wondering and complaining that such a weight of calamity had been heaped on a man of blameless life. His friends reply by insisting that he could *not* have been blameless; and they vindicate the divine justice on the ground that, whatever he may say or think, he must, by some sins (though they cannot bring any charge home to him) have called down these judgments. They do not, it should be observed, suggest any *other* ground for supposing him a sinner, except the mere circumstance of his suffering under a visitation which they consider as *totally inexplicable* except on that supposition. He, on the other hand, persists in maintaining his innocence. Now if the speakers could be

supposed to have known,—or even believed as probable,—any such doctrine as that of a future and immortal life, it is plain they would have adverted to that topic, as cutting short the dispute, and explaining the difficulty. If they had had the least particle of the faith of the Apostle, they would have said, in his words, “Our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory,” &c.

Now when there are two possible interpretations of any passage, each, in itself admissible, but of which the one is perfectly reconcileable with the general drift of the Work, while the other is utterly inconsistent with it, and would make the whole unintelligible, there can surely be no doubt which interpretation is to be preferred.

It has been however contended that “the doctrine of a future state was always entertained by the Israelites, though not expressly declared in the Mosaic law;”—that the silence of Moses would not eradicate their belief;—and that if they had been ignorant of it, they could not have been said with truth to “have much advantage every way” over the Gentiles: but would have been their inferiors in point of religious knowledge, inasmuch as the doctrine formed a part of “the universal religion of mankind.” But surely, even on the supposition (which I do not maintain) that the whole nation of Israel utterly disbelieved a future state, the Gentiles cannot be said to have had much advantage over them in point of religious *knowledge*, from believing, if they really had believed, what they seem to have but very faintly suspected, the current *fables* (for they were no better) respecting another world; viz. that admission into a place of happiness after death was to be procured by *piety* towards the gods; including under that term, acts of the foulest impurity, and the most infernal cruelty: by due obedience, for instance, to the divine institutions of Cotyttto, the Babylonish Venus, who sentenced every female without exception to become a

prostitute for hire;<sup>1</sup> and by human sacrifices at the tomb of the defunct. Let no one forget, that such notions of *piety* were not confined to barbarian nations: even Aristotle, in his projected republic, in which he wisely prohibits the exhibition of indecent objects to youth, is forced to limit himself to the exclusion of young persons from the *temples of those gods, of whose worship such exhibitions formed a necessary part*. And the anecdote of Cato is well-known, who withdrew from the theatre, that his presence might not interrupt the sacred impurities of a religious festival. Truly, “every abomination of the Lord which He hateth, have those nations done *unto their gods* ;” and the expectation of future happiness from such gods and such services could hardly have been reckoned either as religious *knowledge*, or as an *advantage* in point of faith.<sup>2</sup>

On the actual belief, however, of the great mass of the Israelites, we have no means of deciding positively; but if any one should suppose most of them to have thought little or nothing, one way or the other, about what should become of them after death, nor consequently to have either believed or disbelieved, properly speaking, the doctrine in question, his conjecture certainly would not be at variance with the representations Moses gives of the grossness of ideas, and puerile short-sightedness of the nation; who, while fed by a daily miracle, and promised the especial favour of the Maker of the universe, had their minds set on “the flesh-pots of Egypt, and the fish, and the cucumbers, and the leeks.” Christians of these days are not surely *more* gross-minded and unthinking than those Israelites; but every one, at least every minister who is sedulous in his duties, must know, that a large proportion of them require to be incessantly reminded, that this life is not the whole of their existence; though the doctrine be one which is “expressly declared”

---

<sup>1</sup> See Herodotus.

<sup>2</sup> See *Lessons on the History of Religious Worship*. Lesson ii. §§ 4 and 5.

in their religion ; and that silence on that subject is quite sufficient, if not to eradicate from their minds all *belief*, at least to put an end to all *thought*, about the matter.

There is no doubt, however, that some considerable time before our Lord's advent, the belief in a future state did become prevalent (though, as the case of the Sadducees proves, not *universal*) among the Jews. In the second book of Mac-cabees, a work of small authority indeed as a history, but affording sufficient evidence of the opinions of the writer and his contemporaries, we find not only unequivocal mention of the doctrine, (though, by the way, not as an *undisputed* point,) but persons represented as *actuated by the motives* which such a doctrine naturally suggests ; which doubtless we should, sometimes at least, have met with also in the historical books of the Old Testament, had the same belief prevailed all along. And our Lord himself alludes to the prevailing opinion of the generality of those whom he addresses : " Search " (or " ye search " <sup>1</sup>) " the Scriptures, for in them *ye think* ye have eternal life, and they are they that testify of me : " as much as to say, the very prophets who allude to the doctrine of eternal life, do likewise foretell the coming and describe the character of me, the Bestower of it ; these two parts of their inspired word hang together ; he who is blind to the one, can find no *rational* hope on the other ; since " I am the way, and the truth, and the life," and " he that hath the Son hath life, and he that hath not the Son hath not life." This passage, indeed, as well as the others to the same purpose in the New Testament, though they imply the prevalence of this tenet among the Jews, and the general *sincerity* and *strength* of their conviction, do not by any means imply either that this their confident expectation was *well-founded* on Scriptural evidence, or that their notions respecting a future life were *correct*. Had these last two circumstances been

---

<sup>1</sup> The word in the original, *ἐρευνᾶτε*, may bear either an imperative or an indicative sense.

superadded (which is evidently impossible) to the general sincere reception of the doctrine, it could not have been said, with any propriety, that "Christ abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the Gospel."

The truth probably is, that, as the indications of a future state, which are to be found in the prophets, are mostly such as will admit of an interpretation referring them to a promise of temporal deliverance, those persons would most naturally so understand them in the first instance at least, who were so "slow of heart" as to the prophecies respecting the Messiah, as to expect in him a glorious *temporal* prince only; while those who were more intelligent, and took in the spiritual sense of the prophecies relating to *Him*, would be led to put the spiritual interpretation on the other also. I say, in the first instance, because when the belief of a future state had been introduced, from whatever quarter, and did prevail, all who held it would naturally interpret in that sense whatever passages in their Scriptures seemed to confirm it. But it does not follow, that such a belief was correct, even when supported by an appeal to passages of Scripture which really do relate to the doctrine in question; for, if one part of a scheme be understood literally and carnally, and another part spiritually, the result will be a most erroneous compound; if eternal life be understood to be promised, but the character and kingdom of Christ, who was to bring it to light and procure it, be misunderstood, the faith thus formed will be essentially incorrect.

In fact, all the temporal promises of the Mosaic law have a spiritual signification. The land of Canaan, and the victory and prosperity to which the Israelites were invited, are types of the future glories prepared by Christ for his followers; but then, the *Law*, which they were to observe as their part of the covenant, with all its sacrifices and purifications, had a corresponding spiritual signification also; being types of the redeeming sacrifice of Christ, and of the faith



and holiness of heart required of his followers. Those who understood both parts literally, were right as far as they went; for the observance of the Law did literally bring those promised temporal blessings as a reward; and those also are right, and are further enlightened, who perceive the spiritual signification of *both* parts: but it is an error to couple the spiritual interpretation of one part with the literal interpretation of the other; as those of the Jews did, who imagined that eternal life was the promised reward of obedience to the Law of Moses, and who *looked for immortal happiness as the sanction of a religion to be propagated and upheld by a temporal Messiah.*

This incongruous mixture of part of the shadow with part of the substance, appears to have been an error of the Jews of our Lord's time, which not only prevented most of them from believing in Him, but, in a great degree, clung to those even who admitted his pretensions. The efficacy of the observance of the Law in procuring the blessings of the life to come, blessings which were never promised as any part of the sanction of that Law, was so inveterate a persuasion among them, that they were for superadding these extinct legal observances to their faith in Christ; and even persuaded many of the Gentile converts (among the Galatians especially), that their profession of Christianity required them to "be circumcised and keep the Law" as a condition of salvation.

So far, then, as any of the Jews disjoined the prophetic annunciations of immortality from those relating to the spiritual kingdom of Christ, and looked for eternal rewards as earned by obedience to the Mosaic Law, so far their expectations were groundless, their faith erroneous; even though resting on the authority of such parts of Scripture as, in a different sense, do relate to the doctrine in question.

An error, not unlike this, prevails among some Christians; who look for a complete revelation of Gospel-truth in every book of the Old Testament: as if a series of letters from a

father to his son, from his childhood to his mature age, were to be confusedly blended together, and it were contended, as necessary to vindicate the consistency of the writer, that all, from the earliest to the latest, should contain the very same instructions.

It is highly probable, however, that the belief of a future state, as it prevailed among the Jews in our Lord's time, and for a considerable period before, was not, properly speaking, *drawn* from their Scriptures in the first instance—was not *founded* on the few faint hints to be met with in their prophets; though these were evidently called in to *support* it; but was the gradual result of a combination of other causes with these imperfect revelations. For otherwise, one would expect that there would have been some notice in the books of Ezra and Nehemiah (written after all the most important prophecies had been delivered) of so mighty a revolution having taken place in the minds of the Jews of their time, as a change from ignorance to a full conviction, on so momentous a point, by a supposed decisive revelation.

§ 10 Respecting the details of the rise and prevalence of the doctrine of a future state among the great-majority of the Jews, the scantiness of historical authority leaves us chiefly to our own conjectures. Without entering at large into a disquisition which must, after all, be obscured by much uncertainty, it may be allowable to suggest, that the Jews were likely to be much influenced by the *probable* arguments (for it has been admitted that there are such) which their own reason partly supplied, and which they partly learned from the neighbouring nations, with whom (and with some of the more enlightened and intelligent of them) they had much more, and much more extensive, intercourse after the captivity than before. Nor does such a supposition militate, as might, at first sight, be suspected, against what was formerly advanced respecting the prevailing disbelief, among the heathen, of the popular fables of Elysium and Tartarus, and respect-

ing the emptiness of the pretended immortality of the soul, held by philosophers; who thought that it was to be re-absorbed into the substance of the Deity, from which it had been separated, and to have no longer any distinct personal existence. For, whatever their belief might be, they would be likely, in any discussion with their Jewish neighbours, to set forth either such arguments as occurred to them in favour of a future retribution, which undoubtedly was a part of the religion they professed, or such pretended proofs of the natural and necessary immortality of the soul, as their schools supplied. And such discussions we cannot but suppose must have been frequent; since the intercourse of the dispersed Jews with the Gentiles was such as to lead to the disuse of their own language, and the consequent necessity of a translation of their Scriptures into Greek. Now the Jews, who claimed to be favoured with an authentic revelation of God's will, and to be his peculiar people, could not have been satisfied to rest their pretensions to such superiority, and their boast of its advantages, on the extraordinary providence under which their *ancestors* had lived, but which seems to have been nearly, if not entirely, withdrawn from themselves; but would be likely to set up a rival claim to that of the Pagan religions, and to produce from their Scriptures every thing that might seem to favour the hope of a future reward. And this, not insincerely; for the very circumstance of the withdrawing of that miraculous providence under which their nation had formerly lived, would lead them to the expectation of something beyond the grave to compensate the loss. God's moral government of *their* nation at least, they were assured of, from their own past history; and if He had formerly been "a rewarder of them that diligently seek him," they would perceive an improbability of his ceasing to be so; though in this world the "just recompense of reward" was evidently no longer to be looked for. It was to be expected, therefore, that they should be more inclined to believe sincerely in a future retribution, than the Pagans, who had

not the same experimental assurance, that the Deity is, indeed, the moral Governor and Judge of mankind.

Still, their belief, however confidently held by many of them, must have been, as has been said, fundamentally erroneous, as far as it consisted in "thinking they had eternal life in the Scriptures," held out as the reward of obedience to the Mosaic law; which was sanctioned (as was remarked above) by no such promise. For the only just ground on which immortal happiness can be looked for, whatever some arrogant speculators have urged on the other side, is that of an express *promise* of it, as a free *gift*, and not as a natural and merited recompense of virtue.

This latter notion, indeed, — that immortal happiness after death is the just and natural consequence of a well-spent life, (an error analagous to that of the Jews, lately mentioned,) has prevailed to a degree which, considering its utter want of foundation, either in reason or revelation, is truly surprising. A large proportion of deists, and many who admit the truth of the Gospel, though miserably ignorant of it, have either maintained, or (which is much more common, because much easier) have taken for granted, and alluded to as indisputable, the natural and necessary connexion between a virtuous life on earth, and eternal happiness after death. And this is more especially the case with such as lean towards the opinion that Christianity is a mere republication of the religion of nature; a circumstance which confirms what has been just said concerning the extreme ignorance of the Gospel scheme under which these professors of Christianity labour: since if Nature did teach us to expect a happy eternity as the fair, natural, and well-earned reward of virtue, it would follow, that Christianity, which undoubtedly teaches no such doctrine, nor can be understood to favour it, by any one who has even a moderate acquaintance with Scripture, must be, on that very account, essentially different from Natural-religion, and even at variance with it.

§ 11 Not only, however, is Christianity very far from being a republication of Natural-religion, but the notion we are speaking of is (as has been just observed) equally unfounded in reason and in revelation. As the Scriptures speak of eternal life as “the gift of God through Jesus Christ our Lord,” so, reason also shews, that for man to expect to earn for himself, by the practice of virtue, and claim as his just right, an immortality of exalted happiness, is a most extravagant and groundless pretension. It would indeed be no greater folly and presumption to contend, that the brutes are able by their own efforts to exalt themselves to rationality.

In the case indeed of some eminent personages of antiquity, the arrogant hope seems to have been cherished by themselves or their followers, that their great exploits and noble qualities would raise them after death into the number of the gods; and this is precisely the expectation we are now speaking of: for it should be remembered, that by the term which we translate “God,” the ancient heathens understood, not as we do, the Author and Governor of all things, but merely, a Being of a nature superior to man, perfect, happy, and immortal; such, in short, as the Christian hopes to become after death. Now to pretend that man is naturally capable of raising himself to this state—of thus elevating himself into a god—is surely no less extravagant than to suppose that a brute is qualified to exalt itself into a rational Being. Nor did this absurdity escape the more intelligent of the ancient heathen; their sentiments were probably the same as the Bramin is reported to have uttered, who on being asked by Alexander “what a man should do in order to become a god,” is said to have replied, that “he must do something impossible to man.” And accordingly, the most judicious writers of antiquity make little scruple of alluding to the temples erected to those who were canonized as heroes, as merely a more splendid kind of monument; and the sacrifices offered to them, as merely a kind of

solemn commemoration, to support their posthumous fame.

Nor does the belief in a Deity who is the Moral-Governor of the Universe, in reality alter the case so much as many seem to suppose; for if by the practice of virtue man were entitled to claim such a reward from the justice of God, he might strictly and properly be said to earn and acquire it for himself, as a labourer his wages. Men are apt indeed to speak of the justice of the Deity as leading him to the rewarding of virtue, as well as the punishing of sin, in the next world, (considering such reward and punishment as the natural consequence of each respectively,) as if the two cases were *parallel*; whereas in truth they are even *inconsistent* with each other: for a man deserves reward only for doing something *beyond his bounden duty*—something, consequently, which he would not deserve punishment for omitting. This obvious rule of justice every one assents to in human affairs: no positive rewards are proposed to men by legislators for merely fulfilling their engagements, and paying their debts; though if they fail to do so, punishments are denounced; those, on the other hand, who voluntarily devote their fortunes, their services, or their persons, to the public good, we consider as worthy to be rewarded by riches, honours, or rank; while no one ever thought of denouncing punishment for the mere absence of such munificent liberality and generous public-spirit; which indeed would lose their very name and character by the attempt to make them compulsory. In no case, in short, does justice dictate reward to be placed on the one side of an alternative, and punishment on the other.

Now if it be admitted, (and few will go so far as to deny it,) that *all* obedience to the commands of our Maker is a *debt* justly due to Him,—a service his creatures are bound to perform,—it follows, that the discharge of that debt, by a life of perfect rectitude, would not, in itself, entitle a man to claim any reward on the plea of merit, except only exemp-

tion from punishment. For as a servant (according to the illustration used by our Lord himself) is not *thanked* by his master for performing with exactness his appointed task of daily labour, so also must his disciples, as He proceeds to tell them, call themselves, even when they have done all that is required of them, "unprofitable servants, who have done but that which it was their duty to do," and who can have consequently no merit to boast.

It may be said, indeed, and with truth, that the creatures of a benevolent Deity may reasonably expect, that He should provide for the enjoyment, or comfort at least, of those He has called into being; as a father does for his children. And though in this world marks may be perceived of such a provision being made for the enjoyment not only of man, but of the brute-creation also, (to which, be it remembered, this reasoning equally applies,) yet, since it is plain, that the goods of this world are not regularly distributed, and the best men frequently lead a life of suffering, it may be urged, that this irregularity must be rectified in a future life; in which such persons shall receive a compensation for the unmerited afflictions they have undergone in this. All this may be admitted; nor need we inquire, how far life is in general a good or an evil; or what proportion of men's sufferings may be traced to their own misconduct: let us rate, at the very highest that reason will admit, the sufferings in any supposed case,—the innocence of the sufferer,—and the compensation to be fairly expected; and to what, after all, will this fair and ample compensation amount? To an eternity of exalted bliss? The idea is too extravagant to be entertained for a moment. Surely the fair compensation would fall so incalculably below this,—would be such a trifle in comparison, as hardly to be worth noticing in the present argument. We see every day men submitting voluntarily, during a considerable portion of their lives, to no small amount of toil, privation, and danger, not for the certainty, but for a probability only—a chance dependent on many

different contingencies—of enjoying, during the latter years of their life, such ease and comfort, wealth, prosperity, and glory, as this world has to bestow: and in most instances, he who refuses to do this, is censured for his indolence and folly. Now it must surely be allowed, that a *certainly* (instead of a mere contingency) of a life, approaching in length to that of the antediluvians, to be spent in the enjoyment (not of such “good things as eye hath not seen nor ear heard, neither hath it entered into the heart of man to conceive,” but) of such happiness as may be conceived in this world, would be a much fuller compensation for the greatest mass of undeserved afflictions that ever man suffered, than the attainment of such objects as men commonly aim at, (and which, after all, they are not sure of attaining,) can be reckoned, when weighed against the hardships they cheerfully submit to in the pursuit. If, however, such a compensation as I have supposed should be considered too small, let it, for the argument’s sake, be multiplied ten fold; and still it will be as far as ever from bearing any proportion to that “far more exceeding and *eternal* weight of glory,” which the Gospel, and the Gospel only, holds out to us as “the *gift* of God, through Jesus Christ our Lord;” but which man’s presumptuous self-sufficiency has pretended to discover and to claim.

An inconsiderate and hasty objector may, perhaps, contend, that the longest period of enjoyment would be no enjoyment at all, if known to be of limited duration; that it would be neither attractive in prospect, nor gratifying in possession, from the disturbing reflection that it must have an end. If any one can seriously feel this as an objection, let him try to impress on the generality of mankind, as the Christian minister assiduously, and not very effectually, labours to do, the reflection, that this life must have an end, in less than a tenth part of the space allotted to the antediluvians; let him endeavour to withdraw men’s attention and interest from the perishable goods and enjoyments of this



world; adding, also, the great *uncertainty* of them, even during the short period of our abode here; and dwelling also on the never-ending life which awaits man beyond the grave; and he will find, that, many as are the afflictions of the present life, and short, precarious, and responsible as it is, men are yet so wedded to the things of this world, that, so far are we from being haunted with the thought of parting with them, and from having our delight in them thus destroyed, on the contrary, it is not without a continual effort that even the best Christian can wean himself from over-attachment to the passing scene, and “set his affection on things above, not on things on the earth.” And the result must be an admission, that a limited period of enjoyment, so far from being disregarded, is often even too satisfactory; that the thoughts of its termination are not apt to be even so intrusive as they ought to be.

The origin of much of the confusion of thought which has prevailed on this subject, and which has led to the groundless notion of a *claim* to immortal happiness, established by a virtuous life, is probably this; that we observe some human actions to be really and justly deserving of gratitude and reward from *other men*: being beyond what *they* had any right to demand; and hence many persons are apt to forget that such actions cannot have a similar claim on the Almighty. Any one, for instance, who freely relieves a fellow-creature in distress, or aids him in his pursuits, is justly entitled to gratitude and reward from *him*; having done more than *that other man* had any right to demand of him; (for which very reason, by the bye, the other could have no right to *punish* him for *not* doing it;) but since God *has* a strict claim upon him for the practice of every duty, no one can, in his sight, set up the plea of merit, or boast of his services.

Some, however, may urge, that immortal happiness, though not demanded as a right from the *justice* of God, may reasonably be hoped from his *goodness*; and that it is

agreeable to his attributes to bestow it. Doubtless, this is so far conformable to *what we know* of the divine attributes, that we need not be surprised at his condescending, in any instance, to bestow it, nor hesitate to believe, on sufficient evidence, (as the Christian does,) in his having done so. But this is far different, not only from a claim, but from a rational expectation, supposing no proof to exist of an express promise to that purpose. If a rich and liberal man freely bestows a bountiful gift on any one, he certainly performs an action suitable to his nature; but it would be strange to say, that therefore that particular person had, and that any one else has, a fair right to expect it of him. As far as we know, it is nothing inconsistent with God's nature, to confer perfection and happiness, at once, on any of his creatures; as He, perhaps, has on some others of them: but yet we know, that on Man He has not. The immortal happiness, therefore, of which we are speaking, not only can be no other than a free gift, but a gift which can be reasonably expected on no other ground than that of express *promise*.

Such a promise, the Christian thankfully and joyfully recognises, as held out in the Gospel; in which he finds eternal life uniformly alluded to, not as merely "brought to light" by Jesus Christ, but *procured* through his means. He came not into the world merely that his followers might *know* of this immortal life, but (as He himself declares, "that they might *have* life." The Christian Scriptures do not profess to republish, as part of the religion of nature) the doctrine that eternal happiness is the just and legitimate reward of a virtuous life; but, on the contrary, while they speak of death as the "*wages* of sin," they represent eternal life, not as the wages of obedience, but as "*the gift* of God through Jesus Christ:" a reward, indeed, dependent on obedience, but earned and merited by the sacrifice of a Redeemer.

§ 12 The perversion of this doctrine, by those who imagine that they may “continue in sin that grace may abound,” is nothing different from the abuse to which almost every other doctrine of Scripture (and, indeed, almost every truth ever taught) is liable. That salvation is a free gift, through Jesus Christ, yet is prepared for those only who obey his commandments and walk in his steps, is in itself no more mysterious or difficult, than a multitude of cases which occur daily, and the nature of which is readily comprehended by every man of common sense; because common sense is usually consulted in the ordinary affairs of life, even by those who lay it aside in religious questions. Every one would judge readily and rightly, in such a case, for instance, as that of a rich and bountiful man placing a poor labourer on a piece of ground, which he is charged to cultivate industriously and carefully; (receiving for this purpose, a supply of implements also, and of seed-corn, and all other necessary stock) with the promise, that if he does so, for a certain time, the land shall be bestowed upon him in perpetuity; if not, he shall be deprived of it. If a man placed in this situation should suffer the ground to lie waste, and pass his time in sloth, because he was a dependent on another’s bounty, every one perceives that that advantage would of course be withdrawn from him: should he, on the other hand, diligently exert himself in tilling the spot of land, and then claim it, not as a free gift, but as fairly earned by his labour, no one would fail to censure his absurd ingratitude. Should a case of this kind actually occur, it would probably be thought to present no difficulty to any one’s mind; though our Lord’s parables of the talents, and of the pounds, which correspond so closely with it, have so often failed to convey, as they were designed, the same lesson.

It may be urged, indeed, that to those who acknowledge themselves to be *sinner*s, it is of no practical consequence to determine whether the unsinning obedience of which all men fall short, would, if practised, claim the reward of eternal

life from the justice of God. But, in fact, those who erroneously regard human virtue as naturally and in itself establishing such a claim, and the redemption by Christ as needful for man, only so far as he falls short of his duty, will generally be found, those of them at least whose lives are the most correct, to dislike or underrate that Gospel which so plainly teaches us to plead *only* the merits of another; and to consider Christianity as *less* necessary for such men as themselves, than for the multitude. While, on the other hand, such as are more viciously disposed, though they may admit that it is neither allowable nor safe to “continue in sin that grace may abound,” will yet be likely to have less abhorrence of sin, if they conceive, that it is their *sins only* which give them an interest in the redemption. And though they may acknowledge, that with the utmost care they will not be likely to attain sinless rectitude, yet, when under the influence of temptation, they will be less practically earnest in striving to approach such perfection, from believing that it would, if attained, supersede the necessity of Christ’s sacrifice, and of itself merit salvation. Whereas, when this error is removed, we perceive the full value and importance, and also the right use of the Gospel: and our Lord’s declaration, “I am the way, the truth, and the life; no man cometh unto the Father, but by me,” will be regarded neither as raising an impediment, and limiting, by an arbitrary condition, our just rights; nor yet as proposing a licence, or an excuse, for sin; but as holding out a most gracious offer of an unmerited gift; and thus enforcing virtue by the strongest motives of gratitude and affection, as well as of interest. Those will surely not be the most likely to consider the righteousness of Christ as a substitute for their own, who acknowledge, that the benefits they hope for through Him are such as their own righteousness, however perfect, could never have earned.

§ 13 It appears, then, that whatever arguments may have been adduced, and with whatever effect, in favour of

the natural and necessary *immortality* of the soul; at least, the natural and necessary tendency of virtue to earn a *happy* immortality, can never have been discovered by human reason; because nothing can, properly speaking, be *discovered*, which is not *true*.

But it has been my endeavour to show, that the arguments which human reason actually did or might suggest in favour of a future immortality, when fairly considered, as presented to the minds of such as had nothing else to proceed upon—not of such as are already believers, on other grounds—are insufficient to warrant any thing beyond a probable conjecture; and that, in fact, they very seldom produced even *that* effect. To bring the doctrine fairly within the list of truths discoverable by unaided reason, it should be shown, first, to have not only existed, but *prevailed*, as a matter, not of conjecture, but of belief, in some nation destitute of divine revelation; secondly, to have been believed on *sufficient grounds*; and, thirdly, to have been *correctly* believed. If any one of these requisites be wanting, it cannot be properly reckoned among the doctrines of Natural-religion. But, in truth, it appears that all three of these requisites were wanting among those enlightened nations of antiquity, whose supposed knowledge of a future state is commonly appealed to: their notions were neither correct, nor well-founded, nor generally received as a matter of certain belief. And while the Gentiles were thus left in darkness, the only nation who did receive a divine revelation, had, in that, but a faint and glimmering twilight, as far as respected the glories of the world beyond the grave, till “the day-spring from on high should visit them”—till Jesus Christ should “bring life and immortality to light, through the Gospel.” “For the Law made nothing perfect,<sup>1</sup> but *the bringing in of a better hope*, did,” Heb. vii. 19.

---

<sup>1</sup> There seems reason to think that these words should be understood as a parenthesis. “There is a disannulling, &c. (for the law made nothing perfect) but” [there is] “the bringing in of a better hope.”

To bring forward an elaborate argument to prove that the Gospel did this, considering how expressly it is asserted in the New Testament, may have appeared to some readers a superfluous task. Let them, however, but inquire of those around them, and examine the works of those who have written on the subject,—even such as not only admit the truth of Christianity, but are far from professing to regard it, or intending, in the first instance, to represent it, as a mere republication of Natural-religion,—and they will see that there is but too much need for asserting and maintaining the claim of “the Author and Finisher of our faith,” as having “brought to light” the doctrine in question. It is a claim which is often overlooked at least, even when not expressly denied; and hence, one main point of evidence for the truth of Christianity is conceded to the infidel: while to the minds of believers, it is presented stripped of one of its most striking peculiarities; and a most inadequate view given of its importance.

The depreciation of Christianity hence resulting is, perhaps, not a less evil than heresy, or than infidelity itself; being one more insidious, and less curable. For he who denies any leading doctrine of Christianity, or even the whole of it, but who yet acknowledges the *importance*, if true, of what he rejects, may, at least, be brought to attend to the arguments in favour of it: but, far less corrigible is the error of him, who, regarding Christianity as little more than an authoritative confirmation of the religion of nature, looks upon the whole system with indifference, as a thing needed, perhaps, for the vulgar, but which the educated and intelligent might very well have dispensed with, and about which they need not much concern themselves.

When it is said that the view which has been taken of the doctrine of man’s immortality affords an *evidence* for the truth of Christianity, it is not of course meant to take into the account the superior *correctness* of the Gospel accounts of a future state, as compared with the mythological fables, and

philosophical theories, with which the ancients amused themselves; *that* would of course be begging the question; but, waiving the consideration of the *truth* of what Jesus taught on this subject, its *reception*, in spite of men's being so unprepared to receive it, is undeniable; and it is this which constitutes the argument I allude to. For let any one but compare the state of men's minds in respect to this point, before, and after, the promulgation of the Gospel; let him estimate the opinions of the ancients, not by the hasty conjectures of prejudiced or superficial theorists, but by a careful examination of the testimony they bear to themselves; and let him then consider the decided belief of a future state which forms a part of every modification of Christianity—of every religious system which has been founded on it, including Mahometism—let him consider, I say, the contrast thus presented; and he will see strong reason, even from this circumstance alone, for concluding, that the Person, who could bring about this mighty revolution in the opinions of mankind, must have been a far different Being from Confucius or Socrates.

The arguments adduced, however, as will have been seen, I have principally directed to the believers in Christianity: being anxious to protest against the error prevalent among Christians, of unduly exalting Natural-religion at the expense of Revelation;—of attributing to reason, discoveries which were made, and could be made, only by the Gospel; and of thus under-rating the value of that Gospel, and dishonouring Him, who, through it, “brought life and immortality to light.”

---

## NOTES TO ESSAY I.

---

### NOTE A, page 36.

I HAVE been surprised to find that an interpretation of some of Aristotle's expressions [Eth. B. 1] which makes him acknowledge a future state of enjoyment or suffering, has gained more currency than I could have conceived possible. And this, though it is universally admitted that in the third book of the same treatise he speaks of death as the complete and final extinction of existence, "beyond which there is neither good nor evil to be looked for;" and though, in the first book itself, he observes that "it would be absurd to speak of a man's being happy after his death, since happiness has been defined as consisting in an active exercise of the faculties" [ἐνέργεια.] These different passages, I suppose, are regarded as set off against each other, so as to neutralize Aristotle's judgment on the question. I cannot but think it, however, a better plan, when an eminent author appears to contradict himself within a few pages, to examine whether one of the passages may not have been misinterpreted; or whether he may not have been speaking in one place of what *appears* at first sight, or is *thought* by the generality; and in the other, of what, in his own opinion, is the *real* state of the case: or, in short, whether, in some way or other, he may not be fairly reconciled with himself.

Aristotle is represented as saying, in one of the passages in question (human happiness being the subject of which he is treating), that men are conscious after death of the transactions going on in the present world;—that they are affected by the prosperous or adverse fortune of their surviving friends and relatives; but that they are affected by them in so very *faint and slight* a degree that *nothing which happens after death* can make the difference of a man's being happy or miserable!

Now, if I had met with a passage that plainly conveyed this meaning in a writer of such acknowledged powers of mind, I should have been very strongly inclined to suspect it of being spurious, by whatever external evidence it might have been supported. For, not to mention its being at variance with a plain passage in the third book, (a passage, too, in which Aristotle does not attempt to *prove*



nor even *states*, that death is the termination of existence, as if it were at all questionable; but alludes to it as a truth universally admitted) and even to say nothing of his remarking in the outset of the passage in question, that "*it would be ridiculous to suppose a man to be happy after he is dead*;"—to waive all this, and confine myself to the intrinsic absurdity of the supposed doctrine; he is represented as saying that the deceased are sensible of what is going on in this world, and are affected by it in a very slight degree. Could he be so absurd as not only to pronounce positively that the dead *are* in a percipient state, and likewise that they are aware of what is passing among the survivors, but also that they are nevertheless affected only in a very *small* degree by the good or ill fortune of their friends? If they know any thing at all of it, how can he tell how much or how little they are affected? The more reasonable conjecture would be the contrary; *e. g.* one would suppose that after such a person as Oliver Cromwell had spent what one might regard as a most prosperous life in establishing his own sovereignty, and transmitting it to his son, he would be very miserable at knowing that shortly after his death his son was deposed, his own bones disinterred, the royal family restored, and all the work undone and reversed at which he had been labouring.

The only supposition on which one could imagine the dead to be, though conscious of the condition of their surviving friends, yet very slightly affected by it, would be the supposition that they are too intently occupied with the affairs of the state they are in;—with the happiness or suffering belonging to the condition of the departed. Is *this* then Aristotle's account of the matter? On the contrary, he makes not the slightest allusion to any thing of the kind! The scenes and occupations, whatever they might be, peculiarly belonging to that other life, which is to last either to all eternity, or at least for an indefinite length of time, and all the pains and pleasures thence resulting, are totally passed by as not worth noticing by a writer who is treating on human happiness; and we are left to conclude, it seems, that though the departed care but a very little about what befalls their surviving friends, they care not at all about any thing else: the good or ill fortune of their friends has a small and insignificant influence on their enjoyment or discomfort, but yet is the source of all they have!

No doubt eminent philosophers have been guilty of great absurdities; but there is a limit to all conceivable extravagance: and if any one can believe that Aristotle could be the author of such a tissue of unsupported and self-contradictory absurdities, he can hardly regard him as a philosopher worth studying.

But in fact, there is no such passage in existence: the whole of this notion has originated in a misinterpretation of the author's

words,—the result of that oscitancy to which all are more or less subject.

Those who have an opportunity of consulting the original, I am content to refer to that; and if an attentive perusal does not convince them that, whatever his meaning was, at least it cannot be that which I have been speaking of as attributed to him, they are beyond the reach of any argument I can devise.

For the benefit of the mere English reader, or of such as have not the treatise at hand, I will attempt a brief explanation of the author's meaning. He is speaking of the notion of Solon, who would not allow that a man should be pronounced happy during his life-time, because there is no saying what reverses of fortune he may undergo. "Are we then," says Aristotle, "to suppose that a man is then happy when he is dead? No, this would be too absurd; especially since we have decided that happiness consists in an energy or exercise of his mental powers." (Why should a man's being happy after death be inconsistent with that doctrine, except on the supposition of the dead having no perception?) "But this," he continues, "is not even Solon's meaning; but that one may then safely *decide* as to a man's happiness, (*i. e.* that he *has been* happy) when he is out of the reach of fortune. But then, is he," continues Aristotle, "completely out of the reach of fortune? since it *appears* that good or evil may befall the dead *as well as the living who have no perception of it*; such as credit or disgrace, and good or ill success of friends." Now it is from this sentence chiefly, this very sentence in which Aristotle draws a parallel between the dead, and those of the living who have *no* perception of the credit or discredit accruing to them, that it is inferred that the deceased *have* a perception of what passes after their death!

For, it is said, if they know nothing of it, how can it contribute to or impair their happiness? How it *really* can; it would be hard to say; but Aristotle only says that it *appears* so: and nothing can be more notorious than that many things *are* regarded as good or evil—as things to be desired or deprecated, both prospectively by men while alive, and afterwards by their survivors, without any notion that the party can at the time know, or at least care, any thing about it. Is the desire of posthumous fame, which is so common, and the dread of posthumous infamy, which is nearly universal, to be traced to a supposed perception by the deceased of what is said of him? Does the dread so many entertain of being dissected, or torn by dogs, arise from a supposition that the dead carcases feel, or that their souls at least will at the time be annoyed at the indignity? Did Buonaparte, Oliver Cromwell, and a multitude of others, who have been anxious to make their high station *hereditary*, suppose that they themselves should, at the time, be

viewing and enjoying the greatness of their posterity? The desire of posthumous fame, and of the greatness and prosperity of one's descendants, seems always to have been even the stronger in those who have believed least, or thought least, of a future life. It is difficult for one who has been habituated from infancy to this belief, to imagine himself a person to whom it had never occurred; but is there any one who will say that if he disbelieved either a future state altogether, or the consciousness of the deceased of what happens on earth, he should be now perfectly indifferent as to what should befall his dearest friends, his kindred, and his country, subsequently to his own death, and should exclaim, "When I am dead, let earth and fire be mingled!"

And lastly, would not any one, if Solon's happiness had been spoken of, in having finally succeeded in his great and glorious work of giving Athens a good constitution and laws,—would not any one, I say, have been apt to reply, "Ah, but a few years after his death, Pericles made destructive inroad on the constitution; the whole State fell soon under the control of a lawless democracy; and, by their mismanagement, the city was captured, and subjected to the thirty tyrants?" This would not impair Solon's happiness, supposing him insensible; but it would impair the *speaker's idea of his happiness*.<sup>1</sup>

These delusions of the imagination are productive of real effects on human thoughts and conduct. Aristotle seems to think, it would be too *shocking* to popular feelings (λίαν ἀφίλον, καὶ ταῖς ἐδέξαις ἐναντίον) to say that it is nothing to a man's happiness what becomes of his surviving friends: but (proceeding all along on the supposition that he knows nothing of it) decides that it cannot have any weight worth noticing.

The circumstance that he has used some expressions which, to a learner, familiar himself with the notion of a future state, would seem to convey that idea, as when he speaks of events which, in

---

<sup>1</sup> The imperfect and confused sympathy we have with others, in respect of their feelings towards us, and indeed universally, can be likened to nothing so well as to the mixture of transparency and reflection in plate-glass. We sympathize, as A. Smith observes, with an idiot or madman; forming an indistinct idea of being in his situation, and at the same time retaining (which is a contradictory supposition) our

present view of his actions. Just as one looks through the window at a tree, *e.g.*, and sees, by an imperfect reflection, his own face as if placed in the midst of the tree; which, if it were, he could not have that view of the tree. And even so, we cannot imagine people talking of us after our death, without the idea presenting itself of our hearing what they say.

some degree, concern the dead, or "have something to do with their happiness" (meaning with our notion of their happiness)—this is to me an additional proof of the total and general disbelief prevailing in his age and country; at least among the better-educated classes, those for whom he wrote. His carelessness of expression (his opinion such as it clearly was) shows that he never apprehended the slightest danger of any one's supposing him to be speaking of a life after death. None of his readers was likely to suspect him of designing to teach a doctrine so strange and unphilosophical as, in their eyes, this would have appeared. For as to what Plato, and afterwards Cicero, and others, said in behalf of it, no reader, of their own class, seems to have had even any suspicion of their being in earnest. See the following note.

NOTE B, page 37.

CICERO, in his epistles to his friends, in which, if any where, he may be supposed to speak his real sentiments, frankly avows his utter disbelief in a future state, in one sense of the word, *i. e.* a future state of distinct personal existence percipient of pleasure or pain: "*ut mortem, quam etiam beati contemnere debeamus, propterea quod nullum sensum esset habitura,*" &c. [Epist. to L. Mescinus Fam. Ep. lib. v. ep. 21.] And in an epistle to Toranius [lib. vi. ep. 3.] he says, "*nec enim dum ero, angar ulla re, cum omni vacem culpa; et si non ero, sensu omnino carebo.*" This passage will indeed bear another meaning, *viz.* that he is speaking, not of life or death on earth, but of the state after death; in which it may be said, he declares his conviction, that if he continues to exist, his innocence will secure him from suffering, and if he has no being at all, he will have no sensation. The former of these would have been indeed a sufficiently bold assumption: while the latter, "that he who does not exist has no perception," is a truism which I think he would hardly have announced with so much solemnity. Be this as it may however, the passage from the other epistle just quoted, in which the very same expression is used, makes it sufficiently clear that he is speaking, in this also, of existence and non-existence on earth; and declaring his conviction, that he who is dead has no sensation. He repeats the same sentiment in the same words [lib. vi. ep. 4.] in another epistle; "*si jam vocer ad exitum vitæ, non ab ea republica avellar qua carendum esse doleam, præsertim cum id sine ullo sensu futurum sit.*"

And again, [lib. vi. ep. 21.] "*præsertim cum omnium rerum mors sit extremum.*" And it is remarkable that he uses the very language of the Epicureans on the subject; the antidote proposed by Lucretius against the fear of death being the very same both in substance and in words :

"Scilicet haud nobis quidquam, qui *non erimus* tum  
Accidere omnino poterit, *sensumque* movere."

Nor are these sentiments of Cicero's confined to his Epistles, though, in the characters of a philosopher and of an orator, occasions led him sometimes to speak otherwise. In his oration for Cluentius, he avows, without disguise, a contempt, which it is evident he supposed his hearers to partake, for the notion of a future existence : "quid tandem illi mali mors attulit? nisi forte ineptiis et fabulis ducimur, ut existimemus illum apud inferos impiorum supplicia perferre, &c.—quæ si falsa sunt, *id quod omnes intelligunt*, quid ei tandem aliud mors eripuit, præter sensum doloris?"

The expressions of Seneca on the subject bear a striking resemblance to those of Cicero : "*juvabat de æternitate animarum quærere, imo mehercule credere : credebam enim facile opinionibus magnorum virorum, rem gratissimam promittentium magis quam probantium. Dabam me spei tantæ. Jam eram fastidio mihi, jam reliquias ætatis infractæ contemnebam, in immensum illud tempus et in possessionem omnis ævi transiturus : cum subito expectatus sum epistola tua accepta, et tam bellum somnium perdidi.*" *Epist.* 102.

Quotations to the same effect might be multiplied without end ; but these few specimens may suffice to show how rashly the ancient philosophers have been referred to as discoverers of a future state. He who would fain "go back and walk no more with Jesus," will apply to *them* in vain for such a hope : "Lord, to whom shall we go?" the sincere Christian will exclaim ; "thou hast the words of eternal life."

#### NOTE C, page 40.

It is to be wished, that those who inculcate this doctrine would be careful not to expose it, as some have done, to the scoffs of the infidel, by insisting on the restoration, at the resurrection, of the very same particles of matter which were united with the soul in this life. Supposing the doctrine to be true, neither reason nor revelation affords means for ascertaining its truth, or for replying to the cavils brought against it. The question has been ably and copiously handled by the celebrated Mr. Locke ; it will suffice therefore to observe, that, as far as we can ascertain, all the particles of a man's body are undergoing a perpetual and rapid change during his life ;

that which constitutes it, still *his* body, being, not the identity of its materials, but their union with the same soul, and performance of similar functions. If (to use a familiar illustration) a man's house were destroyed, and a kind benefactor promised to rebuild it for him, and to make it much better than before, (for such is the promise made to true Christians when their "earthly tabernacle shall be dissolved,") he would not surely say that the promise had been violated if the same precise materials were not employed; it would suffice, that he had, as before, a house; and one that was suitable for all the same purposes.

As for the state of the soul in the interval between death and the general resurrection, the discussion is unnecessary, and perhaps unprofitable: had knowledge on this point been expedient for us, it would doubtless have been clearly revealed; as it is, we are lost in conjecture. For aught we know, the soul may remain combined with a portion of matter less than the ten thousandth part of the minutest particle that was ever perceived by our senses; since "great" and "small" are only relative. All we can be sure of is, that if the soul *be* wholly disengaged from matter, and yet shall enjoy consciousness and activity, it must be in some quite different manner from that in which we now enjoy them; if, on the other hand, the soul remains inert and unconscious (as it is with respect to the seeing-faculty, for instance, in a man born blind) till its reunion with matter, the moment of our sinking into this state of unconsciousness will appear to us to be instantly succeeded by that of our awaking from it, even though twenty centuries may have intervened: of which any one may convince himself by a few moments' reflection.

NOTE D, page 41.

Πάν τὸ ἐνυλον ἐναφανίζεται τάχιστα τῇ τῶν ὅλων οὐσίᾳ, καὶ πᾶν αἰτίον εἰς τὸν τῶν ὅλων λόγον τάχιστα ἀναλαμβάνεται. Marcus Antoninus, lib. vii. c. 10. Ἐνυπείστης ὡς μέρος. ΕΝΑΦΑΝΙΣΘΗΣΗ ΤΩ ΓΕΝΝΗΣΑΝΤΙ. lib. iv. c. 14.

So Seneca, in his consolation to Marcia, daughter of Cremutius Cordus. "Mors omnium dolorum et solutio est et finis; ultra quam mala nostra non exeunt: quæ nos in illam tranquillitatem in qua antequam nasceremur jacuimus, reponit."

NOTE E, pages 49, 53.

*Exodus*, xv. 26.] If thou wilt diligently hearken to the voice of

the Lord thy God, and wilt do that which is right in his sight, and wilt give ear to his commandments, and keep all his statutes, I will put none of these diseases upon thee, which I have brought upon the Egyptians; for I am the Lord that healeth thee.

Chap. xx. ver. 12.] Honour thy father and thy mother, that thy days may be long in the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee.

Chap. xxiii. ver. 20.] Behold, I send an angel before thee, to keep thee in the way, and to bring thee unto the place which I have prepared. Beware of Him, and obey His voice; provoke Him not; for He will not pardon your transgressions; for my name is in Him. But if thou shalt indeed obey his voice, and do all that I speak; then I will be an enemy unto thine enemies, and an adversary unto thine adversaries. For mine angel shall go before thee, and bring thee in unto the Amorites, and the Hittites, and the Perizzites, and the Canaanites, and the Hivites, and the Jebusites: and I will cut them off. Thou shalt not bow down to their gods, nor serve them, nor do after their works: but thou shalt utterly overthrow them, and quite break down their images. And ye shall serve the Lord your God, and He shall bless thy bread and thy water; and I will take sickness away from the midst of thee. There shall nothing cast their young, nor be barren in thy land: the number of thy days I will fulfil. I will send my fear before thee, and will destroy all the people to whom thou shalt come, and I will make all thine enemies turn their backs unto thee. And I will send hornets before thee, which shall drive out the Hivite, the Canaanite, and the Hittite from before thee. [Ver. 31.] And I will set thy bounds from the Red Sea even unto the sea of the Philistines, and from the desert unto the river; for I will deliver the inhabitants of the land into your hand; and thou shalt drive them out before thee.

*Leviticus*, xxv. 17.] Ye shall not therefore oppress one another; but thou shalt fear thy God: for I am the Lord your God. Wherefore ye shall do my statutes, and keep my judgments, and do them; and ye shall dwell in the land in safety. And the land shall yield her fruit, and ye shall eat your fill, and dwell therein in safety. And if ye shall say, What shall we eat the seventh year? behold, we shall not sow, nor gather in our increase: then I will command my blessing upon you in the sixth year, and it shall bring forth fruit for three years.

Chap. xxvi. ver. 3.] If ye walk in my statutes, and keep my commandments, and do them: then I will give you rain in due season, and the land shall yield her increase, and the trees of the field shall yield their fruit. And your threshing shall reach unto the vintage, and the vintage shall reach unto the sowing time: and ye

shall eat your bread to the full, and dwell in your land safely. And I will give peace in the land, and ye shall lie down, and none shall make you afraid : and I will rid evil beasts out of the land, neither shall the sword go through your land. And ye shall chase your enemies, and they shall fall before you by the sword. And five of you shall chase an hundred, and an hundred of you shall put ten thousand to flight : and your enemies shall fall before you by the sword. For I will have respect unto you, and make you fruitful, and multiply you, and establish my covenant with you. And ye shall eat old store, and bring forth the old because of the new. And I will set my tabernacle among you : and my soul shall not abhor you. And I will walk among you, and will be your God, and ye shall be my people. I am the Lord your God, which brought you forth out of the land of Egypt, that ye should not be their bondmen ; and I have broken the bands of your yoke, and made you go upright.

But if ye will not hearken unto me, and will not do all my commandments ; and if ye shall despise my statutes, or if your soul abhor my judgments, so that ye will not do all my commandments, but that ye break my covenant : I also will do this unto you ; I will even appoint over you terror, consumption, and the burning ague, that shall consume the eyes, and cause sorrow of heart : and ye shall sow your seed in vain, for your enemies shall eat it. And I will set my face against you, and ye shall be slain before your enemies : they that hate you shall reign over you : and ye shall flee when no man pursueth you. And if ye will not yet for all this hearken unto me, then I will punish you seven times more for your sins. And I will break the pride of your power ; and I will make your heaven as iron, and your earth as brass. And your strength shall be spent in vain : for your land shall not yield her increase, neither shall the trees of the land yield their fruits. And if ye walk contrary unto me, and will not hearken unto me, I will bring seven times more plagues upon you, according to your sins. I will also send wild beasts among you, which shall rob you of your children, and destroy your cattle, and make you few in number ; and your high-ways shall be desolate. And if ye will not be reformed by me by these things, but will walk contrary unto me ; then will I also walk contrary unto you, and will punish you yet seven times for your sins. And I will bring a sword upon you, that shall avenge the quarrel of my covenant : and, when ye are gathered together within your cities, I will send the pestilence among you ; and ye shall be delivered into the hands of the enemy. And when I have broken the staff of your bread, ten women shall bake your bread in one oven, and they shall deliver you your bread again by weight : and ye shall eat, and not



be satisfied. And if ye will not for all this hearken unto me, but walk contrary unto me; then I will walk contrary unto you also in fury; and I, even I, will chastise you seven times for your sins. And ye shall eat the flesh of your sons, and the flesh of your daughters shall ye eat. And I will destroy your high places, and cut down your images, and cast your carcases upon the carcases of your idols, and my soul shall abhor you. And I will make your cities waste, and bring your sanctuaries unto desolation, and I will not smell the savour of your sweet odours. And I will bring the land into desolation; and your enemies which dwell therein shall be astonished at it. And I will scatter you among the heathen, and will draw out a sword after you; and your land shall be desolate, and your cities waste. Then shall the land enjoy her sabbath, as long as it lieth desolate, and ye be in your enemies' land; even then shall the land rest, and enjoy her sabbaths. As long as it lieth desolate it shall rest; because it did not rest in your sabbaths, when ye dwelt upon it. And upon them that are left alive of you I will send a faintness into their hearts in the lands of their enemies; and the sound of a shaken leaf shall chase them; and they shall flee, as fleeing from a sword; and they shall fall when none pursueth. And they shall fall one upon another, as it were before a sword, when none pursueth; and ye shall have no power to stand before your enemies. And ye shall perish among the heathen, and the land of your enemies shall eat you up. And they that are left of you shall pine away in their iniquity in your enemies' lands; and also in the iniquities of their fathers shall they pine away with them.

If they shall confess their iniquity, and the iniquity of their fathers, with their trespass which they trespassed against me, and that also they have walked contrary unto me; and that I also have walked contrary unto them, and have brought them into the land of their enemies; if then their uncircumcised hearts be humbled, and they then accept of the punishment of their iniquity: then will I remember my covenant with Jacob, and also my covenant with Isaac, and also my covenant with Abraham will I remember; and I will remember the land. The land also shall be left of them, and shall enjoy her sabbaths, while she lieth desolate without them; and they shall accept of the punishment of their iniquity; because, even because they despised my judgments, and because their soul abhorred my statutes. And yet for all that, when they be in the land of their enemies, I will not cast them away, neither will I abhor them, to destroy them utterly, and to break my covenant with them: for I am the Lord their God. But I will for their sakes remember the covenant of their ancestors, whom I brought forth out of the land of Egypt in the sight of the heathen, that I might be their God: I

am the Lord. These are the statutes and judgments and laws which the Lord made between him and the children of Israel in mount Sinai, by the hand of Moses.

*Numbers*, xiv. 20.] And the Lord said, I have pardoned according to thy word: but as truly as I live, all the earth shall be filled with the glory of the Lord. Because all those men which have seen my glory, and my miracles, which I did in Egypt and in the wilderness, have tempted me now these ten times, and have not hearkened to my voice; surely they shall not see the land which I swear unto their fathers, neither shall any of them that provoked me see it: but my servant Caleb, because he had another spirit with him, and hath followed me fully, him will I bring into the land whereinto he went; and his seed shall possess it. Say unto them, as truly as I live, saith the Lord, as ye have spoken in mine ears, so will I do to you: your carcases shall fall in this wilderness; and all that were numbered of you, according to your whole number, from twenty years old and upward, which have murmured against me. Doubtless ye shall not come into the land, concerning which I swear to make you dwell therein, save Caleb the son of Jephunneh, and Joshua the son of Nun. But your little ones, which ye said should be a prey, them will I bring in, and they shall know the land which ye have despised. But as for you, your carcases, they shall fall in this wilderness. And your children shall wander in the wilderness forty years, and bear your whoredoms, until your carcases be wasted in the wilderness. After the number of the days in which ye searched the land, even forty days, each day for a year, shall ye bear your iniquities, even forty years; and ye shall know my breach of promise. I the Lord have said, I will surely do it unto all this evil congregation, that are gathered together against me: in this wilderness they shall be consumed, and there they shall die.

Chap. xxxii. 10.] And the Lord's anger was kindled the same time, and he swore, saying, Surely none of the men that came up out of Egypt, from twenty years old and upward, shall see the land which I swear unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob: because they have not wholly followed me; save Caleb the son of Jephunneh the Kenezite, and Joshua the son of Nun: for they have wholly followed the Lord. And the Lord's anger was kindled against Israel, and he made them wander in the wilderness forty years, until all the generation that had done evil in the sight of the Lord was consumed. And, behold, ye are risen up in your fathers' stead, an increase of sinful men, to augment yet the fierce anger of the Lord toward Israel. For if ye turn away from after him, he will yet again leave them in the wilderness; and ye shall destroy all this people.

Chap. xxxiii. ver. 55.] But if ye will not drive out the inhabitants of the land from before you; then it shall come to pass, that those which ye let remain of them shall be pricks in your eyes, and thorns in your sides, and shall vex you in the land wherein ye dwell. Moreover it shall come to pass, that I shall do unto you, as I thought to do unto them.

*Deuteronomy*, i. 35.] Surely there shall not one of these men of this evil generation see that good land, which I sware to give it unto you fathers. Save Caleb the son of Jephunneh; he shall see it, and to him will I give the land that he hath trodden upon, and to his children, because he hath wholly followed the Lord. Also the Lord was angry with me for your sakes, saying, Thou shalt not go in thither. But Joshua the son of Nun, which standeth before thee, he shall go in thither: encourage him: for he shall cause Israel to inherit it.

Chap. iv. ver. 1.] Now therefore hearken, O Israel, unto the statutes and unto the judgments, which I teach you for to do them, that ye may live, and go in and possess the land which the Lord God of your fathers giveth you. For the Lord thy God is a consuming fire, even a jealous God. When thou shalt beget children, and children's children, and ye shall have remained long in the land and shall corrupt yourselves, and make a graven image, or the likeness of any thing, and shall do evil in the sight of the Lord thy God, to provoke him to anger: I call heaven and earth to witness against you this day, that ye shall soon utterly perish from off the land whereunto ye go over Jordan to possess it; ye shall not prolong your days upon it, but shall utterly be destroyed. And the Lord shall scatter you among the nations, and ye shall be left few in number among the heathen, whither the Lord shall lead you. And there ye shall serve gods, the work of men's hands, wood and stone, which neither see, nor hear, nor eat, nor smell. Thou shalt keep therefore his statutes, and his commandments, which I command thee this day, that it may go well with thee, and with thy children after thee, and that thou mayest prolong thy days upon the earth, which the Lord thy God giveth thee for ever.

Chap. v. ver. 29.] O that there were such an heart in them, that they would fear me, and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them, and with their children for ever! Ye shall observe to do therefore as the Lord your God hath commanded you: ye shall not turn aside to the right hand or to the left. Ye shall walk in all the ways which the Lord your God hath commanded you that ye may live, and that it may be well with you, and that ye may prolong your days in the land which ye shall possess.

Chap. vi. ver. 2.] That thou mightest fear the Lord thy God, to

keep all his statutes and his commandments, which I command thee, thou, and thy son, and thy son's son all the days of thy life ; and that thy days may be prolonged. Hear therefore, O Israel, and observe to do it : that it may be well with thee, and that ye may increase mightily, as the Lord God of thy fathers hath promised thee, in the land that floweth with milk and honey. And it shall be when the Lord thy God shall have brought thee into the land which he sware unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give thee great and goodly cities, which thou buildedst not, and houses full of all good things which thou filledst not, and wells digged, which thou diggedst not, vineyards and olive trees, which thou plantedst not ; when thou shalt have eaten and be full ; then beware lest thou forget the Lord, which brought thee forth out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage. Thou shalt fear the Lord thy God, and serve him, and shalt sware by his name. Ye shall not go after other gods, of the gods of the people which are round about you ; (for the Lord thy God is a jealous God among you,) lest the anger of the Lord thy God be kindled against thee, and destroy thee from off the face of the earth. Ye shall not tempt the Lord your God, as ye tempted him in Massah. Ye shall diligently keep the commandments of the Lord your God, and his testimonies, and his statutes which he hath commanded thee. And thou shalt do that which is right and good in the sight of the Lord : that it may be well with thee, and that thou mayest go in and possess the good land which the Lord sware unto thy fathers, to cast out all thine enemies from before thee, as the Lord hath spoken. And when thy son asketh thee in time to come, saying, What mean the testimonies, and the statutes, and the judgments which the Lord our God hath commanded you ? Then thou shalt say unto thy son, We were Pharaoh's bondmen in Egypt ; and the Lord brought us out of Egypt with a mighty hand : and the Lord shewed signs and wonders, great and sore, upon Egypt, upon Pharaoh, and upon all his household, before our eyes : and he brought us out from thence, that he might bring us in, to give us the land which he sware unto our fathers. And the Lord commanded us to do all these statutes, to fear the Lord our God, for our good always, that he might preserve us alive, as it is at this day. And it shall be our righteousness, if we observe to do all these commandments before the Lord our God, as he hath commanded us.

Chap. vii. ver. 12.] Wherefore it shall come to pass, if ye hearken to these judgments, and keep, and do them, that the Lord thy God shall keep unto thee the covenant and the mercy which he sware unto thy fathers : and He will love thee, and bless thee, and multiply thee : He will also bless the fruit of thy womb, and the fruit of thy land, thy corn, and thy wine, and thine oil, the increase of thy kine, and

the flocks of thy sheep, in the land which he sware unto thy fathers to give thee. Thou shalt be blest above all people: there shall not be male or female barren among you, or among your cattle. And the Lord will take away from thee all sickness, and will put none of the evil diseases of Egypt, which thou knowest, upon thee; but will lay them upon all them that hate thee.

Chap. viii. ver. 1.] All the commandments which I command thee this day shall ye observe to do, that ye may live and multiply, and go in and possess the land which the Lord sware unto your fathers. And it shall be, if thou do at all forget the Lord thy God, and walk after other gods, and serve them, and worship them, I testify against you this day that ye shall surely perish. As the nations which the Lord destroyed before your face, so shall ye perish; because ye would not be obedient unto the voice of the Lord your God.

Chap. xi. ver. 8.] Therefore shall ye keep all the commandments which I command you this day, that ye may be strong, and go in and possess the land whither ye go to possess it; and that ye may prolong your days in the land, which the Lord sware unto your fathers to give unto them and to their seed, a land that floweth with milk and honey. For the land, whither thou goest in to possess it, is not as the land of Egypt, from whence ye came out, where thou sowedst thy seed, and wateredst it with thy foot, as a garden of herbs; but the land, whither ye go to possess it, is a land of hills and valleys, and drinketh water of the rain of heaven; a land which the Lord thy God careth for: the eyes of the Lord thy God are always upon it, from the beginning of the year even unto the end of the year. And it shall come to pass, if ye shall hearken diligently unto my commandments which I command you this day, to love the Lord your God, and to serve him with all your heart, and with all your soul, that I will give you the rain of your land in his due season, the first rain and the latter rain, that thou mayest gather in thy corn, and thy wine, and thine oil. And I will send grass in thy fields for thy cattle, that thou mayest eat and be full. Take heed to yourselves; that your heart be not deceived, and ye turn aside, and serve other gods, and worship them; and then the Lord's wrath be kindled against you, and he shut up the heaven, that there be no rain, and that the land yield not her fruit; and lest ye perish quickly from off the good land which the Lord giveth you. Therefore shall ye lay up these my words in your heart, &c. [Ver. 21.] That your days may be multiplied, and the days of your children, in the land which the Lord sware unto your fathers to give them, as the days of heaven upon the earth. For if ye shall diligently keep all these commandments which I command you, to do them, to love the Lord

your God, to walk in all his ways, and to cleave unto him; then will the Lord drive out all these nations from before you, and ye shall possess greater nations and mightier than yourselves. Every place whereon the soles of your feet shall tread shall be yours: from the wilderness and Lebanon, from the river, the river Euphrates, even unto the uttermost sea, shall your coast be. There shall no man be able to stand before you: for the Lord your God shall lay the fear of you and the dread of you upon all the land that ye shall tread upon, as he hath said unto you. Behold, I set before you this day a blessing and a curse: a blessing, if ye obey the commandments of the Lord your God, which I command you this day: and a curse, if ye will not obey the commandments of the Lord your God, but turn aside out of the way which I command you this day, to go after other gods, which ye have not known.

Chap. xv. ver. 4.] For the Lord shall greatly bless thee in the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee for an inheritance to possess it: only if thou carefully hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe to do all these commandments which I command thee this day. For the Lord thy God blesseth thee, as he promised thee: and thou shalt lend unto many nations, but thou shalt not borrow; and thou shalt reign over many nations, but they shall not reign over thee. [Ver. 10.] Thou shalt surely give him, and thine heart shall not be grieved when thou givest unto him; because that for this thing the Lord thy God shall bless thee in all thy works, and in all that thou putttest thine hand unto.

Chap. xvi. ver. 20.] That which is altogether just shalt thou follow, that thou mayest live, and inherit the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee.

Chap. xvii. ver. 19.] And it (viz. the book of the Law, for the king's use) shall be with him, and he shall read therein all the days of his life: that he may learn to fear the Lord his God, to keep all the words of this law and these statutes, to do them: that his heart be not lifted up above his brethren, and that he turn not aside from the commandment, to the right hand, or to the left: to the end that he may prolong his days in his kingdom, he, and his children, in the midst of Israel.

Chap. xxviii. ver. 1.] And it shall come to pass, if thou shalt hearken diligently unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe and to do all his commandments which I command thee this day, that the Lord thy God will set thee on high above all nations of the earth: and all these blessings shall come on thee, and overtake thee, if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God. Blessed shalt thou be in the city, and blessed shalt thou be in the field. Blessed shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy ground,

and the fruit of thy cattle, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep. Blessed shall be thy basket and thy store. Blessed shalt thou be when thou comest in, and blessed shalt thou be when thou goest out. The Lord shall cause thine enemies that rise up against thee to be smitten before thy face; they shall come out against thee one way, and flee before thee seven ways. The Lord shall command the blessing upon thee in thy store-houses, and in all that thou settest thine hand unto; and he shall bless thee in the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee. The Lord shall establish thee an holy people unto himself, as he hath sworn unto thee, if thou shalt keep the commandments of the Lord thy God, and walk in his ways. And all people of the earth shall see that thou art called by the name of the Lord; and they shall be afraid of thee. And the Lord shall make thee plenteous in goods, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy ground, in the land which the Lord sware unto thy fathers to give thee. The Lord shall open unto thee his good treasure, the heaven to give the rain unto thy land in his season, and to bless all the work of thine hand: and thou shalt lend unto many nations, and thou shalt not borrow. And the Lord shall make thee the head, and not the tail, and thou shalt be above only, and thou shalt not be beneath; if that thou hearken unto the commandments of the Lord thy God, which I command thee this day, to observe and to do them: and thou shalt not go aside from any of the words which I command thee this day, to the right hand, or to the left, to go after other gods to serve them.

But it shall come to pass, if thou wilt not hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe to do all his commandments and his statutes which I command thee this day: that all these curses shall come upon thee and overtake thee. Cursed shalt thou be in the city, and cursed shalt thou be in the field. Cursed shall be thy basket and thy store. Cursed shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy land, the increase of thy kine and the flocks of thy sheep. Cursed shalt thou be when thou comest in, and cursed shalt thou be when thou goest out. The Lord shall send upon thee cursing, vexation, and rebuke, in all that thou settest thine hand unto for to do, until thou be destroyed, and until thou perish quickly; because of the wickedness of thy doings, whereby thou hast forsaken me. The Lord shall make the pestilence cleave unto thee, until he have consumed thee from off the land, whither thou goest to possess it. The Lord shall smite thee with a consumption and with a fever, and with an inflammation, and with an extreme burning, and with the sword, and with blasting, and with mildew; and they shall pursue thee until thou perish. And the heaven that is over thy head

shall be brass, and the earth that is under thee shall be iron. The Lord shall make the rain of thy land powder and dust: from heaven shall it come down upon thee, until thou be destroyed. The Lord shall cause thee to be smitten before thine enemies: thou shalt go out one way against them, and flee seven ways before them: and shalt be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth. And thy carcase shall be meat unto all fowls of the air, and unto the beasts of the earth, and no man shall fray them away. The Lord will smite thee with the botch of Egypt, and with the emerods, and with the scab, and with the itch, whereof thou canst not be healed. The Lord shall smite thee with madness, and blindness, and astonishment of heart: and thou shalt grope at noon-day, as the blind gropeth in darkness, and thou shalt not prosper in thy ways: and thou shalt be only oppressed and spoiled evermore, and no man shall save thee. Thou shalt betroth a wife, and another man shall lie with her: thou shalt build an house, and shalt not dwell therein: thou shalt plant a vineyard, and shalt not gather the grapes thereof. Thine ox shall be slain before thine eyes, and thou shalt not eat thereof: thine ass shall be violently taken away from before thy face, and shall not be restored to thee: thy sheep shall be given unto thine enemies, and thou shalt have none to rescue them. Thy sons and thy daughters shall be given unto another people, and thine eyes shall look, and fail with longing for them all the day long; and there shall be no might in thine hand. The fruit of thy land, and all thy labours, shall a nation which thou knowest not eat up: and thou shalt be only oppressed and crushed away: so that thou shalt be mad for the sight of thine eyes which thou shalt see. The Lord shall smite thee in the knees, and in the legs, with a sore botch that cannot be healed, from the sole of thy foot unto the top of thy head. The Lord shall bring thee and thy king which thou shalt set over thee, unto a nation which neither thou nor thy fathers have known; and there shalt thou serve other gods, wood and stone. And thou shalt become an astonishment, a proverb, and a by word, among all nations whither the Lord shall lead thee. Thou shalt carry much seed out into the field, and shalt gather but little in: or the locust shall consume it. Thou shalt plant vineyards, and dress them, but shalt neither drink of the wine, nor gather the grapes; for the worms shall eat them. Thou shalt have olive trees throughout all thy coasts, but thou shalt not anoint thyself with the oil; for thine olive shall cast his fruit. Thou shalt beget sons and daughters, but thou shalt not enjoy them; for they shall go into captivity. All thy trees and fruit of thy land shall the locust consume. The stranger that is within thee shall get up above thee



very high; and thou shalt come down very low. He shall lend to thee, and thou shalt not lend to him: he shall be the head, and thou shalt be the tail. Moreover all these curses shall come upon thee, and shall pursue thee, and overtake thee, till thou be destroyed; because thou hearkenedst not unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to keep his commandments and his statutes which he commanded thee. And they shall be upon thee for a sign and for a wonder, and upon thy seed for ever, because thou servedst not the Lord thy God with joyfulness, and with gladness of heart, for the abundance of all things; therefore shalt thou serve thine enemies which the Lord shall send against thee, in hunger, and in thirst, and in nakedness, and in want of all things: and he shall put a yoke of iron upon thy neck, until he have destroyed thee. The Lord shall bring a nation against thee from far, from the end of the earth, as swift as the eagle flieth; a nation whose tongue thou shalt not understand. A nation of fierce countenance, which shall not regard the person of the old, nor shew favour to the young. And he shall eat the fruit of thy cattle, and the fruit of thy land, until thou be destroyed: which also shall not leave thee either corn, wine, or oil, or the increase of thy kine, or flocks of thy sheep, until he have destroyed thee. And he shall besiege thee in all thy gates, until thy high and fenced walls come down, wherein thou trustedst, throughout all thy land: and he shall besiege thee in all thy gates, throughout all thy land, which the Lord thy God hath given thee. And thou shalt eat the fruit of thine own body, the flesh of thy sons and of thy daughters, which the Lord thy God hath given thee, in the siege, and in the straitness, wherewith thine enemies shall distress thee. So that the man that is tender among you, and very delicate, his eye shall be evil toward his brother, and toward the wife of his bosom, and toward the remnant of his children, which he shall leave: so that he will not give to any of them of the flesh of his children whom he shall eat; because he hath nothing left him in the siege, and in the straitness, wherewith thine enemies shall distress thee in all thy gates. The tender and delicate woman among you, which would not adventure to set the sole of her foot upon the ground for delicateness and tenderness, her eye shall be evil toward the husband of her bosom, and toward her son, and toward her daughter, and toward her young one that cometh out from between her feet, and toward her children which she shall bear; for she shall eat them for want of all things secretly, in the siege and straitness, wherewith thine enemy shall distress thee in thy gates. If thou wilt not observe to do all the words of this law that are written in this book, that thou mayest fear this glorious and fearful name, The Lord thy

God; then the Lord will make thy plagues wonderful, and the plagues of thy seed, even great plagues, and of long continuance, and sore sicknesses, and of long continuance. Moreover he will bring upon thee all the diseases of Egypt, which thou wast afraid of; and they shall cleave unto thee. Also every sickness and every plague, which is not written in the book of this law, them will the Lord bring upon thee until thou be destroyed. And ye shall be left few in number, whereas ye were as the stars of heaven for multitude; because thou wouldst not obey the voice of the Lord thy God. And it shall come to pass, that as the Lord rejoiced over you to do you good, and to multiply you; so the Lord will rejoice over you to destroy you, and to bring you to nought; and ye shall be plucked from off the land whither thou goest to possess it. And the Lord shall scatter thee among all people, from the one end of the earth even unto the other; and there thou shalt serve other gods, which neither thou nor thy fathers have known, even wood and stone. And among these nations shalt thou find no ease, neither shall the sole of thy foot have rest: but the Lord shall give thee there a trembling heart, and failing of eyes, and sorrow of mind: and thy life shall hang in doubt before thee; and thou shalt fear day and night, and shalt have none assurance of thy life: in the morning thou shalt say, Would God it were even! and at even thou shalt say, Would God it were morning! for the fear of thine heart wherewith thou shalt fear, and for the sight of thine eyes which thou shalt see. And the Lord shall bring thee into Egypt again with ships, by the way whereof I spake unto thee, Thou shalt see it no more again: and there ye shall be sold unto your enemies for bondmen and bondwomen, and no man shall buy you.

Chap. xxix. ver. 22.] So that the generation to come of your children that shall rise up after you, and the stranger that shall come from a far land, shall say, when they see the plagues of that land, and the sicknesses which the Lord hath laid upon it; and that the whole land thereof is brimstone, and salt, and burning, that it is not sown, nor beareth, nor any grass groweth therein, like the overthrow of Sodom and Gomorrah, Admah and Zeboim, which the Lord overthrew in his anger and in his wrath: even all nations shall say, Wherefore hath the Lord done thus unto this land? what meaneth the heat of this great anger? Then men shall say, Because they have forsaken the covenant of the Lord God of their fathers, which he made with them when he brought them forth out of the land of Egypt: for they went and served other gods, and worshipped them; gods whom they knew not, and whom he had not given unto them: and the anger of the Lord was kindled against this land, to bring upon it all the curses that are

written in this book: and the Lord rooted them out of their land in anger, and in wrath, and in great indignation, and cast them into another land, as it is this day.

Chap. xxx. ver. 1.] And it shall come to pass, when all these things are come upon thee, the blessing and the curse, which I have set before thee, and thou shalt call them to mind among all the nations whither the Lord thy God hath driven thee, and shalt return unto the Lord thy God, and shalt obey his voice according to all that I command thee this day, thou, and thy children, with all thine heart, and with all thy soul; that then the Lord thy God will turn thy captivity, and have compassion upon thee, and will return and gather thee from all the nations, whither the Lord thy God hath scattered thee. If any of thine be driven out unto the uttermost parts of heaven, from thence will the Lord thy God gather thee, and from thence will he fetch thee: and the Lord thy God will bring thee into the land which thy fathers possessed, and thou shalt possess it; and he will do thee good, and multiply thee above thy fathers. And the Lord thy God will put all these curses upon thine enemies, and on them that hate thee, which persecuted thee. And thou shalt return and obey the voice of the Lord, and do all his commandments, which I command thee this day. And the Lord thy God will make thee plenteous in every work of thine hand, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy land, for good: for the Lord will again rejoice over thee for good, as he rejoiced over thy fathers; if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to keep his commandments and his statutes which are written in this book of the law, and if thou turn unto the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul.

See, I have set before thee this day life and good, and death and evil; in that I command thee this day to love the Lord thy God, to walk in his ways, and to keep his commandments and his statutes and his judgments, that thou mayest live and multiply: and the Lord thy God shall bless thee in the land whither thou goest to possess it. But if thine heart turn away, so that thou wilt not hear, but shalt be drawn away, and worship other gods, and serve them; I denounce unto you this day, that ye shall surely perish, and that ye shall not prolong your days upon the land, whither thou passest over Jordan to go to possess it. I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live: That thou mayest love the Lord thy God, and that thou mayest obey his voice, and that thou mayest cleave unto him: for he is thy life, and the length of thy days: that thou mayest dwell in the land which the

Lord sware unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give them.

Chap. xxxi. ver. 16.] And the Lord said unto Moses, Behold, thou shalt sleep with thy fathers; and this people will rise up, and go a whoring after the gods of the strangers of the land, whither they go to be among them, and will forsake me, and break my covenant which I have made with them. Then my anger shall be kindled against them in that day, and I will forsake them, and I will hide my face from them, and they shall be devoured, and many evils and troubles shall befall them; so that they will say in that day, Are not these evils come upon us, because our God is not among us? And I will surely hide my face in that day for all the evils which they shall have wrought, in that they are turned unto other Gods. For I know that after my death ye will utterly corrupt yourselves, and turn aside from the way which I have commanded you; and evil will befall you in the latter days, because ye will do evil in the sight of the Lord, to provoke him to anger through the work of your hands.

Chap. xxxii. ver. 24.] They shall be burnt with hunger, and devoured with burning heat, and with bitter destruction: I will also send the teeth of beasts upon them, with the poison of serpents of the dust. The sword without, and terror within, shall destroy both the young man and the virgin, the suckling also with the man of gray hairs. [Ver. 46.] And he said unto them, Set your hearts unto all the words which I testify among you this day, which ye shall command your children to observe to do; all the words of this law. For it is not a vain thing for you, because it is your life: and through this thing ye shall prolong your days in the land, whither ye go over Jordan to possess it.

#### NOTE F, page 54.

IN tota lege Mosaica nullum vitæ æternæ præmium, ac ne æterni quidem præmii indicium vel vestigium extat. Opinionum, quæ inter Judæos erat, circa vitam futuri sæculi, discrepantia, arguit promissiones Lege factas tales esse ut ex iis certi quid de vita futuri sæculi non possit colligi. Quod et Servator noster non obscure innuit, cum resurrectionem mortuorum colligit [Matt. xxii.] non ex promisso aliquo Legi addito, sed ex generali tantum illo promisso Dei, quo se

Deum Abrahami, Isaaci, et Jacobi futurum sposponderat: quæ tamen illa collectio magis nititur cognitione intentionis divinæ sub generalibus istis verbis occultatæ, &c. &c. Episcopus, *Inst. Theol.* lib. iii. § 1. c. 2.

Grotius distinctly maintains the same tenet; "Moses in Religionis Judaicæ institutione, si diserta Legis respicimus, nihil promisit supra hujus vitæ bona, terram uberem, penum copiosum, victoriam de hostibus, longum et valentem senectutem, posteros cum bona spe superstites. Nam si quid est ultra, in umbris obtegitur, aut sapienti ac difficili ratiocinatione colligendum est," &c.

---

## ESSAY II.

---

### ON THE DECLARATION OF GOD IN HIS SON.

---

THAT the doctrines of man's immortality, and of the eternal reward reserved for the pious and obedient, were truly "brought to light through the Gospel," I have endeavoured to establish in the First Essay. There are other peculiarities in the Christian religion, closely connected with these, which are still more frequently overlooked, (at least, overlooked *as peculiarities*,) relating to the mode in which the Gospel leads men towards the attainment of its promises, and brings them into that state of piety and of obedience, which is requisite as a preparation for immortal happiness. That piety and obedience *are* requisite to make man acceptable in God's sight, is indeed no peculiarity of the Gospel: natural religion would teach, that if there be any future state, the most likely means of making that a happy state, must be a profound reverence for the Great Being on whose favour all happiness must depend, and a course of life agreeable to those moral principles which he seems to have implanted in our minds, for the regulation of our conduct. And many persons accordingly content themselves with the consideration, that piety and virtue are enforced in the Christian religion by *stronger sanctions*, (the hopes and fears of another world,) than natural religion could establish; and they notice also, perhaps, the peculiar purity of the Gospel-morality; but without observing the peculiarity of the *mode* in which that piety and morality are inculcated; or rather in which men are led to

inculcate on themselves these lessons, and to acquire the requisite dispositions.

The object of the present and of the succeeding Essay will be to point out these distinguishing features: and first, that of the mode in which Christians are drawn towards God, and sentiments both of piety and of emulation of the divine goodness, implanted and cherished, by a certain peculiarity in the character of the Gospel revelation.

It is to be observed, that I am proceeding throughout on the supposition of the truth of that revelation; and without therefore adducing any *direct* evidence in support of it; though, indirectly, it may serve as a confirmation to the believer's faith, and may suggest matter of useful meditation to the sceptic, to find Christianity *distinguished*, in this and in several other remarkable particulars, both from Natural-religion, and from all pretended revelations; and distinguished by such marks as are favourable to its claim of coming from God.

The writings of the Apostle John, being composed, as is generally believed, in a great measure for the purpose of refuting the prevailing heresies of his times, and of asserting and explaining, in opposition to them, as much as is proper or possible for us to know respecting the true nature and character of Jesus Christ, are accordingly those which throw the most light on that peculiarity in the Gospel-revelation which is now under consideration. In the beginning of his Gospel he tells us, [ch. i. 18.] "God no man hath seen at any time; the only-begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, He hath declared Him."<sup>1</sup> The first clause of this passage, viz. that "no man hath seen God at any time," is an assertion so obvious and indisputable, that it seems to be made principally as introductory to the second, "the only-begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, He hath declared Him;" that is, the necessity of such a declara-

<sup>1</sup> I have preserved the order of the words as it is in the original.

tion arises from the spiritual and stupendously exalted nature of the Deity; who is not the object of any of our senses, and is very imperfectly comprehensible by our understanding.

Now it is most important to observe, that the “declaration” which John here speaks of, cannot be understood as merely an authoritative announcement of God’s will, such as was made by the prophets; because the context evidently shows that he is speaking of something *peculiar* to the only-begotten Son; *ἐκεῖνος ἐξηγήσατο*: “He hath declared Him,” or rather, with still more propriety, “*it is He* that hath declared Him:” this *declaration* therefore does not refer to a mere *message* sent from God, but to a *manifestation* of God himself in Jesus Christ: which the Apostle has just above described by saying, “the Word was made flesh and dwelt among us.” He came not merely as a prophet *sent from* God, but as “Emmanuel, God *with us*.” This view of the declaration or revelation which He made of God, is strikingly confirmed by numerous other passages in the sacred writings: He says of Himself, “he that hath seen me, hath seen the Father.” Paul describes the incarnation, by saying, “God was *manifest* in the flesh;” and that Christ was the brightness of his glory,<sup>1</sup> and the express image of his person.<sup>2</sup> Now that the divine nature of Christ is implied in these passages, though sufficiently clear, it is not my present object to point out: what I wish to call attention to, is, that they represent the incarnation as a certain kind of *revelation*, *display*, or *manifestation*, to men, of the divine nature. In what manner, and for what purpose, this manifestation was effected, is the object of our present inquiry.

§ 2 But in order to keep clear of even the suspicion of that most unchristian and dangerous fault, *presumption*, it will be necessary to premise two remarks; first, that we are

<sup>1</sup> Ἀπαύγασμα τῆς δόξης.

<sup>2</sup> Χαρακτήρ τῆς ὑποστάσεως.



inquiring, not why the incarnation *took place*, but why it was *made known to us*. Now there is a wide difference between two things, which nevertheless the inattentive are apt to confound together; I mean, between inquiring into the reasons of the divine counsels themselves, and inquiring into the reasons of their being *made known* to us: the former is in very many cases both a fruitless and a presumptuous inquiry, because it relates frequently to unknown parts of the creation, and to the attributes and operations of the divine mind, which are beyond our clear comprehension; whereas to inquire why certain doctrines are *revealed* to us, can hardly be a blameable, and will generally be a profitable, often indeed a necessary, inquiry, because *this* relates to our own minds—to the practical effect intended to be produced on ourselves. For example, why the sacrifice of Christ was necessary for our redemption, is a mystery beyond the reach of our present faculties; and all attempts fully to explain it have served only to excite a prejudice against the doctrine, and to expose the weakness of arrogant speculation: but to consider why this sacrifice of Christ was *announced* to mankind, is both allowable and necessary; it was doubtless for the purpose of exciting our gratitude, confidence, love, and obedience, towards Him; together with a deep abhorrence of sin, which needed so mighty an expiation.

So also in the present case, we dare not presume to determine why God thought fit to take our nature upon Him in Jesus Christ. But why He thought fit to *reveal* this incarnation—to announce Himself as the eternal “Word made flesh”—is what it cannot but behove us to know.

And it should be added, that since the Scriptures were designed for the instruction of mankind in general, whatever they do reveal, must be understood in the sense which would be likely to strike, not the most learned and most acute metaphysicians, but the generality (in those times and countries) of readers of plain common sense and of suffi-

cient candour and diligence. The meaning which one might expect each expression to convey to those, must be what was designed to be conveyed to all.<sup>1</sup>

The other caution to be observed is, that in those cases where we can perceive *something* of the purposes which God has in view, we are not thence to conclude that we know them *all*: many great objects may be comprehended in each of God's dispensations; though but a very small part of these objects be as much as is sufficient, and perhaps possible, for us, in our present state, to understand. We are sure that the sun gives light and heat to this world; and many ignorant savages perhaps conclude from thence, that it was created for no other purpose; doubtless we are as much called on for gratitude as if the case were so; but we are well assured, that many other planets partake of the same advantages; and we should be very much to blame, were we to conclude positively that even this is the only, or indeed the principal, purpose for which the sun was created. To have ascertained, and to perceive *a* reason for any thing that God has done, is far different from perceiving *the* reason; though the two are often confounded. So, in the present case, whatever benefits to mankind we may perceive from the manifestation of God in the flesh, we have no right to infer, that there may not be other, and even greater, objects effected by it, of which, for the present at least, we must remain ignorant.

With these cautions carefully kept in mind, we may proceed, with due reverence, to inquire for what purposes we are taught by Scripture to believe in the incarnation of God in Christ Jesus, and to regard *that* as a manifestation of God to his creatures. We shall find good reason for concluding, that it was designed, in part at least, for the purpose of leading men both to piety and to morality, by a method admirably adapted to that purpose, and which is absolutely

---

<sup>1</sup> See Essay First, *On the Kingdom of Christ*, §§ 5 and 10.

peculiar to Christianity ; viz. by first bringing down more to the level of our capacity the moral attributes of the Deity, and thus better engaging our affections on the side of devotion ; and secondly, by exhibiting a perfect and exalted Model of human excellence. Both these objects are effected by the mysterious union of the divine and human Natures ; the divine “ Word was made flesh,” to lead us to affectionate piety ; and “ the manhood was taken into God,” to teach us Godlike virtue.

The few remarks which I propose to offer on each of these points, though very far from exhausting the subject, may be sufficient to suggest, to such as are disposed to pursue it, a train of pleasing and profitable meditation.

§ 3 First, then, with respect to piety : (or whatever other term may be employed, to denote collectively the sentiments felt or expressed by men towards a Supreme Being :) it is, indeed, undeniable, that the works of creation clearly indicate a Contriver of stupendous power and wisdom, whose observation we can never hope to elude, nor to resist his will ; and we cannot but acknowledge his goodness, in bestowing on his creatures all the benefits they enjoy, notwithstanding our inability to explain those appearances of evil which present themselves.

But though it is easy to say, that we ought to love and worship, as well as reverence and fear, the Supreme Being, yet nothing is, in fact, more difficult, for such a creature as man, surrounded too, as he is, by gross material objects, and necessarily occupied in worldly pursuits, than to lift up his thoughts and affections to God. A Being, whose nature is so incomprehensible, that our knowledge of Him is chiefly negative ; of whom we know, not so much what He is, as what He is *not*, it is difficult to make even a steady object of thought. Now, we believe that God is a *spirit* ; but we have a very faint notion of the nature of a Spirit, except in respect of its being *not* a body. God

is *eternal*; but we are bewildered with the very idea of Eternity, of which we only know that it is *without* beginning, and *without* end: we say, that the divine attributes are *infinite*; i. e. *not* bounded, *unlimited*. And even where our knowledge of God extends beyond mere negatives, we cannot but perceive, on attentive reflection, that the attributes assigned to the Deity must, in reality, be such, in Him, as the ordinary sense of those same terms, when applied to men, can but very faintly shadow out.<sup>1</sup> But the difficulty is still greater when we attempt to set our *affections* on this awful and inconceivable Being;—to address as a tender parent, Him, who has formed out of nothing, and could annihilate in a moment, countless myriads, perhaps, of worlds besides our own; and to whom “the nations are but as the drop of a bucket, and the small dust of a balance;”—to offer our tribute of praise and obedience, to Him who can neither be benefited nor hurt by us;—to implore favour and deprecate punishment, from Him who has no passions, or wants, as we have;—to confess our sins, before Him who is exempt not only from all sin, but from all human infirmities and temptations;—and, in short, to hold spiritual intercourse, with One with whom we can have no sympathy, and of whom we can with difficulty form any clear conception.

And this difficulty is not diminished, but rather increased, in proportion as man advances in refinement of notions, in cultivation of intellect, and in habits of profound philosophical reflection; and thus becomes less gross in his ideas of the Supreme Being. To the dull and puerile understandings of a semi-barbarous nation, such as the Israelites at the time of Moses, many of the circumstances just mentioned would be less likely to occur, than to those of a more enlightened people; and an habitual and prac-

---

<sup>1</sup> See Note (G), at the end of this Essay.

tical piety would accordingly have been more easy of attainment to them,—while favoured, as they were, with frequent sensible divine interpositions of various kinds, and continually addressed by prophets in the name of the Lord, Jehovah, the tutelary God of their nation,—than to men of more enlarged minds, and more thoughtful habits, *not* favoured with the Gospel-revelation.

These impediments to devotion, it is probable, the Apostle John had in mind, when he said, “No man hath seen God at any time:” and he seems to have conceived the “declaration” of God, by Jesus Christ, was calculated—not, indeed, wholly to remove these impediments, but—so far to moderate and lower them, as to leave no insuperable difficulty to a willing mind.

§ 4 To the causes which have been enumerated, it is to be attributed, that the religion of those who are called philosophers,—whose speculations respecting the Deity have been accounted the most refined and exalted,—has always been cold and heartless in its devotion; or rather has been nearly destitute of devotion altogether.

On the other hand, the great mass of mankind, from the same cause, have, in all ages and countries, shown a disposition to address their prayers, not to the Supreme Creator immediately, but to some angel, demi-god, subordinate deity, or saint, (as is the practice of the Romish and Greek Churches,) whom they suppose to approach more to their own nature, to form a sort of connecting link between God and man, and to perform for them the office of Intercessor. Thus, while the one class are altogether wanting in affectionate devotion, the other direct it to an improper object; giving that worship to the creature which is due only to the Creator.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> See *Lessons on the History of Religious Worship*, Lesson vi. §§ 10 and 11.

A preventive for both these faults is provided, in that manifestation of God in Jesus Christ, which affords us such a display of the divine attributes, as, though very faint and imperfect, is yet the *best* calculated, considering what human nature is, to lead our affections to God. When Christ fed a multitude with five loaves, He made not indeed a greater, or a more benevolent display of power, than He does in supporting, from day to day, so many millions of men and other animals as the earth contains: but it was an instance far better calculated to make an impression on men's minds of his goodness and parental care. I speak not now of this miracle as an *evidence* of his pretensions; for that purpose would have been answered as well by a miracle of destruction; but of the peculiar *beneficent* character of it. The same may be said of his healing the sick, raising the dead, and teaching the people. Though these are not greater acts of power and goodness than the creation of the world and all things in it, yet they are what the minds of most men at least, can more steadily dwell upon, and which, therefore, are the most likely to affect the heart.

Many, it is true, of the qualities which our Lord displayed, such as his patience under provocation, and fortitude against pain and danger, are such as can belong to Him in his human nature alone, and can present us but a very faint shadow of the attributes of God, considered as such; but still these are attributes of one and the same *Person*, in whom we believe the Divine and Human Natures to have been united; though we can no more comprehend that union, than we can that of the human soul and body; and they are well fitted to fix our affections on that Person. And if any one should contend, by drawing nice metaphysical distinctions, that this is not properly to be called "the love of God," it is at least the nearest approach to it of which our nature is capable. Or should any one inquire (being led by the ordinary English use of the word, to

draw too strong a distinction between the Divine *Persons*<sup>1</sup>) whether, in this way, love towards God the *Father* is sufficiently inculcated, he may find an answer in our Lord's own words: "If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know Him and have seen Him. Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father? Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, He doeth the works." John xiv. 7—10.

If we cannot endure steadily to gaze on the sun, but prefer contemplating its brightness as reflected from the objects on the earth, much more may we expect that the splendour of the Divine Being should be too dazzling for mortal gaze;—that it should be necessary for his brightness to be veiled in flesh, in order to enable us to contemplate it in the best manner that, for us, is possible; and that we should have a better notion of Him, by viewing this radiation of his glory, [ΑΠΑΥΤΑΣΜΑ ΤΗΣ ΔΟΞΗΣ,] than by straining our weak faculties in attempting to comprehend Him as He is. Our views, indeed, on this awful subject must, after all, be indistinct, confused, and imperfect; but if they are better than we could otherwise have attained, and are the utmost that we can or need attain, the object is sufficiently accomplished. And, indeed, if any one had *clear*, *distinct*, and *complete* views of the Divine Being, this would alone be a sufficient proof to me that they were *incorrect* views.

If, indeed, as is notoriously the fact, our only notions of

<sup>1</sup> See the Article *Person*, in the Appendix to *Elements of Logic*. "The views set forth in that Article have been solemnly and earnestly denounced as unsound; without, however, any, the slightest, attempt at *disproof*. This,

therefore, may be regarded as an implied admission that the reasons by which those views are supported are unanswerable. For if any, even plausible, refutation could have been devised, one must presume it would have been subjoined."

the divine attributes, and our terms for expressing them, are, and always must be, borrowed from such human qualities as have the most analogy<sup>1</sup> to them, it seems to follow inevitably, that the more excellent man would give us ever the more adequate notion of the divine excellence; and, consequently, that the life of that Man who was altogether perfect, by union with the Godhead, must afford us the very best idea (however imperfect that best may be) that we can attain, of the moral attributes of God.

Moreover, our Lord was subject to all the wants, infirmities, and temptations, incident to his and our human nature; and suffered on the cross for our redemption. And it should be remembered, that we are not exalting the character of Jesus, if we regard Him as naturally destitute of such feelings as ambition, love of glory, patriotism, and other such natural propensities, as are not in themselves sinful: nor could it, in that case, have been said with truth, that He “was *in all points tempted* like as we are.” No doubt the offer of temporal dominion, to a descendant of the royal house of David, together with the eager reception this would have ensured Him with his countrymen, who were anxiously looking for such a Messiah, and the glory and pleasure of delivering them from a foreign yoke, constituted a real and strong temptation; especially when the alternative was rejection by his brethren, insult, persecution, and ignominious death.<sup>2</sup> May not this offer have been pressingly renewed just at the time of his betrayal?<sup>3</sup> and may not this temptation

<sup>1</sup> See Archbishop King's *Discourse*, with Notes, appended to the last edition of the *Bampton Lectures*.

<sup>2</sup> It has appeared to several divines (and I fully coincide with them) more probable, that the plot laid by Judas Iscariot (who could not be ignorant of his Master's supernatural powers) was for driving him to assume a temporal dominion, than that it was directed against his life. See Hinds' *Catechist's Manual*, p. 251. I have treated more

fully on this subject in a *Discourse* since published.

<sup>3</sup> For we are told that after the temptation in the wilderness, “Satan departed from Him, *for a season*; (ἀχρη καίρου, “till a fitting opportunity;”) and this “season” or “occasion” our Lord himself points out, in saying, “the prince of this world cometh,” . . . “this is your hour, and the power of darkness,” &c. &c.



have been the "cup" which He prayed might be removed from Him? for we are told (Heb. v. 7), that "he offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears, unto Him that was able to save Him from death, and *was heard*, in that He feared:" now we know that he was *not* saved from the death on the cross; it must have been something else, therefore, from which he prayed for deliverance, and *was heard*.

All this calls for our sympathy, as well as reverence and gratitude; and the affectionate attachment thus so naturally generated, will adhere (if I may so express myself) to the divine nature of the Saviour also. And when we worship Him, though we worship Him not as man, but as God, still it will give an affectionate fervour to our devotions, to have an habitual remembrance, that this very God was also man, deigning for our sakes to be "made flesh, and dwell among us," "taking upon Him the form of a servant, and humbling himself even unto the death of the cross."

Undoubtedly, such is the kind of impression which Paul's language, in allusion to the incarnation, must naturally make on the mind, at least, of a plain, simple reader, unskilled in drawing nice metaphysical distinctions; and this must ever be the description of the great mass of Christians. For instance, we read in Heb. iv. 15, 16, "We have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities, but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin. Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need."

When I say, however, that we worship Christ not as man but as God, I mean only, that the worship which evidently the Apostles and their immediate disciples paid, and were taught to pay, to Him, was not directed to a *mere* man, however high in the divine favour, but to God "manifest in the flesh." I am far from supposing that the generality of Christians, that is, the unlearned and unphilosophical, were,

or can be, capable of making, in their worship, a complete mental separation of the two Natures, abstracting distinctly, and contemplating solely, the divine character, and laying aside all consideration of the Human Nature, of Christ. This may be possible for an acute, and learned, and reflective philosopher, without his adopting the notion into which the attempt seems to have led some of those early heretics, who regarded our Lord as *two Persons*,—the man, Jesus, and Christ, a distinct emanation of the Deity. The distinction, I say, it may be possible for a profound and reflective mind so to draw, as yet to keep clear of that heresy; but the bare description of such an abstractive process of thought, would, I conceive, have as much perplexed the greater part of the early disciples, as it manifestly would the generality of unlearned Christians now. The Apostles and their hearers would have told us simply, that they addressed their prayers to a Being whom they regarded as both divine and human,—“the man Christ Jesus,” in whom “dwelleth” (not some emanation or portion of the Deity, but) “*all* the fulness of the Godhead, bodily.” They addressed Him in their worship by his human *name*; as “Lord Jesus, receive my spirit,” &c. Nor could they, indeed, have *invoked* Him as their *Intercessor* and *Mediator*, by virtue of his meritorious sacrifice, keeping out of their minds the Human Nature which those offices imply.<sup>1</sup>

And if such is the impression naturally produced in the generality of simple unphilosophical minds, it cannot be a practically incorrect one; if, at least, it be true, as has been above remarked,<sup>2</sup> that the Scriptures were designed, by unerring wisdom, for the instruction of such minds. For there is this important difference between these books, and any philosophical treatise, that, in the latter, the most ingenious and best educated may sometimes be the only persons

---

<sup>1</sup> See *Sermon (II.) on the Name Emmanuel*.

<sup>2</sup> In the present Essay, § 2, p. 101.

who can ascertain the true meaning; and the majority of those destitute of these advantages, though not wanting in candour or in diligence, may not only be at a loss to understand some things, but are liable, in the most essential points, utterly to *misunderstand* the author. Whereas the Scriptures, if really intended for the mass of mankind, though they may contain passages not intelligible to the unlearned, cannot be calculated to mislead them as to important matters, by conveying to their minds an obvious sense, which yet shall not be the true one.

This consideration the Socinians appear to have always overlooked. Even admitting that every passage in Scripture would, considered in itself, bear their interpretation, still if the simple and *obvious* meaning to *plain* readers, be the reverse of the truth, how can the Scriptures convey a *revelation*? If, as they contend, the worship of Christ be idolatry, must not the Scriptures themselves be charged with leading ordinary Christians into idolatry? The Apostles do, indeed, direct our worship exclusively to God; but to "God in Christ, reconciling the world unto Himself:" nor do they dwell on the necessity of making, in our devotions, any mental separation of the two Natures of that Person who is the object of our worship. On the contrary, observe how, in the Epistle to the Colossians, Paul presents to our view the divine and the human attributes of our Saviour almost simultaneously; "in whom," says he, "we have redemption *through his blood*, even the forgiveness of sins; who is the Image of the invisible God, the first-born of every creature, (*πρωτότοκος πάσης κτίσεως*, born *before* all creatures,) for *by Him were all things created*, that are in Heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible." Col. i. 14, 15, 16. That the notions conveyed by such expressions, to a plain reader, are philosophically correct, I will not undertake to maintain: it is sufficient, that they are scriptural.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> To many of my readers it may seem hardly credible, that, for adducing | the above passage here, and in the  
| *Discourse on the Name Emmanuel*, in

It is not necessary, in an argument addressed to persons who are supposed acquainted with the Scriptures of the New Testament, to dwell as fully as might be done, on those innumerable points in the character and conduct of our Saviour, which may be said with literal propriety to display *divine* excellence; and that, in the most impressive, and at the same time in the most amiable form. The contemplation indeed of that character should be an habitual study to every Christian. It will have been sufficient merely to direct the attention of a believer in the Gospel to the point in question,—the advantage with respect to piety which was intended to accrue from this declaration of God in Christ; by its showing us, not indeed the Divine Being as he is, but “the express image,” or stamp and impression of Him, (*χαρακτήρ τῆς ὑποστάσεως*)—by exhibiting, though a very imperfect, yet a more impressive and endearing picture of the moral attributes of God than we could in any other way attain; and thus drawing our whole heart and affections towards Him.

§ 5 II. Another advantage which was stated to have been probably designed in exhibiting to Man the stupendous

vindication of our worship of Christ, I have been represented as Socinian, and as teaching that the adoration of Christ is idolatry! In general, even those who are the most regardless of truth, yet abstain from such mis-statements as are open to immediate detection. I have been challenged, however, with apparent seriousness, to vindicate my theological character as to this point. I shall leave my vindication in abler hands; for the Apostle Paul (and it is on him, in reality, that the censure is cast) “being dead, yet speaketh;” though neither an inspired, nor, of course, an uninspired writer, can find any expressions which the perverse cannot distort and misrepresent. Such

misrepresentations, however, not only carry their own refutation with them to every candid mind, but also furnish a positive presumption in favour of any position that is so assailed; since, it is to be supposed, they would not have been resorted to, but from a lack of fair and valid objections.

I take this opportunity to advert to some erroneous impressions, which I believe prevail as to the opinions on this subject, entertained by my deceased friend, Blanco White, many years before his death. In a Note at the end of this Essay, I have given an extract from his writings, which may serve to set the matter in its true light—See Note (H).

work of the Incarnation, is, the proposing a perfect model for our imitation.<sup>1</sup> It is an old and well-established maxim, that men learn better from example than from precept. But the difficulty is to find an example fit for imitation. Mere human models are all, more or less, imperfect; and though it is undeniable, that very great benefit may be derived from them, if we are careful to point out, and warn men against their faults, and, by assembling together many different characters of great worth, to provide that the deficiencies of each may be supplied by others; yet still there must always be a certain degree of danger in copying even the best men. The faults and the virtues of each individual are in general so intimately blended, and, as it were, fit together so readily, that it is not easy to avoid the one, while aiming at the other. The faults of one whom we regard as a great and good man, become endeared and ennobled in our eyes by a union with so much virtue; we are apt to take such a favourable view of them, as leads us to excuse them in ourselves, if not even to admire and copy them. “*Decipit exemplar vitiis imitabile*,” is accordingly no less trite a maxim than that which recommends the study of approved models.

It was probably for this reason that the Stoics held forth as a pattern their ideal Wise-man. For, the Sapiens—the Wise-man, or perfectly good and happy character, whom these philosophers delineated—was not one whom they themselves pretended to have ever actually existed. This circumstance, by the way, (though such is undoubtedly the fact,) has been overlooked by many; who have thence charged them with arrogant pretensions to perfect virtue, which it does not appear they ever made. Their object seems to have been, to avoid, on the one hand, the comparative flatness and tediousness of abstract descriptions,

---

<sup>1</sup> For some excellent remarks on this subject, see Hinds' *History of the Rise and Progress of Christianity*, vol. i. p. 89.

and, on the other hand, the errors to be dreaded from the imperfection of human models. And they certainly judged rightly in thinking, that however inevitable it may be that men should have defects, the pattern which is proposed to them should have none; for, far as they will still fall short of perfection, they will thus approach much nearer to it than if they had copied a defective model.

This method, however, of leading men to morality, though perhaps the best that, in their situation, they could have devised, laboured under a very important defect: I speak not of the *blemishes* in the ideal Wise-man they described; though the character which they meant for a perfect one, was, according to the more correct principles now established, very far from perfect; still it is conceivable that it *might* have been so; let us then suppose it completely unexceptionable; still it is *ideal*; it wants the power of inspiring that interest and sympathy,—that affectionate reverence,—that emulation, which a really existing *person* can alone inspire; and being represented to us only by general *descriptions*, it takes even less hold of the mind than the fictitious hero of a drama, who is represented as performing distinct individual actions; though we know that both are alike creatures of the imagination; which have therefore but a very faint effect in exciting us to imitation. An ideal model in short, is but one short step removed from abstract moral precept: real human examples, on the contrary, are unsafe, through their imperfection. Both may do some service, but both leave much to be desired.

But if, while some of the ancient moralists were employed in recounting the actions, and holding forth the examples, of really existing illustrious men, to stimulate the emulation of their hearers,—and while others were pointing out, in the grave and lofty descriptions of the philosopher, or the vivid representations of the poet, an ideal exemplar of perfect excellence;—a man exhibited, such as men *should* be, not such as they are,—what would these sages, I say, have

thought, had they been assured on sufficient evidence that such a Man had actually appeared on earth; not having his virtues tarnished with defects, like the heroes of their histories: not, a phantom of imagination, like the Persons of their theatre, or the Wise-man of their schools; but a real, living, sublime, and faultless model of godlike virtue? Surely they would have acknowledged, with one voice, that such a character, and such a one only, was exactly suited to their wishes, and to the wants of their hearers: if they were at all sincere in their professions, they would have hailed with rapture the announcement of his existence; but would have wondered, at the same time, and doubted, how human nature could ever have attained this pitch of excellence. We might have answered them, Human nature by itself is indeed far too weak for the task; but in Christ the Divine nature was united to it; in Him “dwelt all the fulness of the Godhead bodily:” the Deity was ever present in an especial manner to direct and support his human soul; and thus presented to his creatures a perfect pattern, which, through the promised aid of the Spirit of Christ, they may copy: that by imitating the divine excellence, as far as it is possible for a creature to do so, we may become, as Christ himself expresses it, “like unto our Father which is in heaven,” and be thus fitted for enjoying a more near approach to his presence in a better state: that we also may be, more completely than in this life, “sons of God, brethren, and joint-heirs of Christ,” and partakers of his glory. “Beloved,” says the Apostle John, “now are we the sons of God; and it doth not yet appear what we shall be; but we know that when He shall appear, we shall be like unto Him; for we shall see Him as He is.”

Behold here, then, (we might exclaim) a truly godlike man, far surpassing your historical or fabulous heroes! Behold here your imaginary Wise-man exemplified in real life! What you have described, that, and much more, He has performed; for He has corrected in actual practice, the errors of your description, and has realized a nobler and more

lovely picture of virtue than even your conceptions ever reached.

It would be unnecessary, I trust, were it possible within reasonable limits, to enter into a detailed examination of the virtues of Christ's character. Every Christian who deserves the name, makes it his attentive study; and those who have learned the most of it, are ever the most desirous, and the most capable of learning yet more. Many valuable writers have treated of the subject; but the Gospels themselves (as those very writers would be the first to admit) will teach more of the imitation of Jesus than all other books together. Each man may do more for himself in this study than the ablest theologian can do for him. He will find in every page such active yet unpretending benevolence—such exalted generosity and self-devotedness—such forbearing kindness and lowliness, combined with dignity—such earnest and steady, yet calm and considerate, zeal—such quiet and unostentatious fortitude—such inflexible yet gentle resolution—that he must acknowledge with the Jewish officers, “never man spake like that man;” never did man, he will add, act like this man; “truly,” as the Centurion exclaimed, “this was a righteous man; truly this was the Son of God,” it was “Emmanuel, God with us.”

And if the student's own heart be not in fault, his character will not fail to receive some tincture from the virtue he is contemplating. Whatever may be our station in life, or peculiar circumstances, we shall still find, that Jesus Christ has “left us an ensample that we should follow his steps;” because the principle of devoted obedience to God, love towards man, and abjuration of all selfish objects, is one which is called for, and must be put in practice, in every situation. Besides which, it is very observable that while all the illustrious characters which are usually held up to our imitation, are persons who occupied such exalted stations, that their lives afford but little instruction to those in humbler and more private situations, (that is, in fact, to the great mass



of mankind), our Saviour's life, on the contrary, though He had so high an office to execute, yet, from the humble station in which He appeared, contains lessons for every description of mankind.

§ 6 It appears, then, that Jesus Christ has "declared" God to Man, not as a prophet merely, but as (what Paul calls him in the Epistle to the Colossians) "the Image of the invisible God;"—not merely by announcing the divine will, but by manifesting, as far as our feeble capacities will permit, the divine glory, and shadowing forth the attributes of the invisible and unsearchable God. And this for two purposes most important to mankind; first, by a softened and endearing, as well as impressive, manifestation of the Deity, to aid and exalt our piety, engaging our affections in the cause of religion; and, secondly, by a bright example of superhuman virtue, seconded by the promise of spiritual aid, to instruct and encourage us in our duty—to illuminate and direct our Christian course—to purify and to elevate our nature. The one purpose, in short, may be said to have been, to bring down God to Man; the other, to lift up Man towards God.

Now, if this view of the subject be correct, it must be admitted, that the method adopted in the Gospel for leading men to piety and to morality, is something altogether peculiar to Christianity; and it is one of those peculiarities which, as was formerly remarked, men are too apt to overlook or to undervalue. I speak not now of those who distinctly deny the divinity of our Lord; but it is, I apprehend, not uncommon for those who assent to the *truth* of that doctrine, to pass by unheeded the important purposes for which it was *revealed*; and thence to lose sight of that striking peculiarity in the Christian religion which results from that revelation, and which it has been the object of this Essay to point out.

The Incarnation, as an abstract speculative point, they are aware is taught in the Gospel, and only in the Gospel;

but the Incarnation, as the basis of the Christian's worship, and of the Christian's obedience, they are too apt entirely to disregard. They content themselves with perceiving, generally, that all religions whatever inculcate piety to God, and virtuous conduct; and fail to observe, that, in the very points which are, thus far, common to all, Christianity is strikingly distinguished from the rest: the *mode* in which it leads us to that piety and virtue, is altogether peculiar to it.

Another circumstance of peculiarity, however, in that mode, remains to be noticed. It is evident, that in order to form a virtuous character, it is requisite not only that a perfect standard be set before us, (such as the model which the Gospel holds out for our imitation,) but also that adequate motives be supplied. And though the emulation which the contemplation of an admirable model is calculated to inspire, is, to a certain degree, a motive, it is not alone sufficient. The rewards and punishments of the next world, as declared in the Gospel, have been already mentioned as furnishing one most powerful motive; but there is another besides this—an appeal to the feelings, not merely to the judgment—a motive of affection, not of mere interest—the introduction of which forms a strikingly distinguishing feature of Christianity; and this peculiarity will form the subject of the next Essay.

---

## NOTES TO ESSAY II.

---

NOTE G, page 104.

“WE ought to remember, that the descriptions which we frame to ourselves of God, or of the divine attributes, are not taken from any direct or immediate perceptions that we have of Him or them; but from some observations we have made of his works, and from the consideration of those qualifications, that we conceive would enable us to perform the like. Thus, observing great order, conveniency, and harmony in all the several parts of the world, and perceiving that everything is adapted, and tends to the preservation and advantage of the whole; we are apt to consider that we could not contrive and settle things in so excellent and proper a manner without great wisdom; and thence conclude that God, who has thus concerted and settled matters, must have wisdom: and having then ascribed to Him wisdom, because we see the effects and result of it in his works, we proceed, and conclude that He has likewise foresight and understanding, because we cannot conceive wisdom without these, and because if we were to do what we see He has done, we could not expect to perform it without the exercise of these faculties.

“And it doth truly follow from hence, that God must either have these, or other faculties and powers equivalent to them, and adequate to these mighty effects which proceed from them. And because we do not know what his faculties are in themselves, we give them the names of those powers, that we find would be necessary to us, in order to produce such effects, and call them wisdom, understanding, and foreknowledge: but at the same time we cannot but be sensible that they are of a nature altogether different from ours, and that we have no direct or proper notion or conception of them. Only we are sure that they have effects like unto those that do proceed from wisdom, understanding, and foreknowledge in us: and when our works fail to resemble them in any particular, as to

perfection, it is by reason of some want or defect in these qualifications.

"Thus our reason teaches us to ascribe these attributes to God, by way of resemblance and analogy to such qualities or powers as we find most valuable and perfect in ourselves.

"If we look into the holy Scriptures, and consider the representations given us there of God or his attributes, we shall find them generally of the same nature, and plainly borrowed from some resemblance to things with which we are acquainted by our senses. Thus when the holy Scriptures speak of God, they ascribe hands, and eyes, and feet to Him: not that it is designed that we should believe that He has any of these members according to the literal signification: but the meaning is, that He has a power to execute all those acts, to the effecting of which these parts in us are instrumental: that is, He can converse with men as well as if He had a tongue and mouth; He can discern all that we do or say as perfectly as if He had eyes and ears; He can reach us as well as if he had hands and feet; He has as true and substantial a being as if He had a body; and He is as truly present every where as if that body were infinitely extended. And in truth, if all these things, which are thus ascribed to Him, did really and literally belong to Him, He could not do what He does near so effectually, as we conceive and are sure He doth them by the faculties and properties which he really possesses, though what they are in themselves be unknown to us."—King's *Sermon*, § iv. p. 6—10.

That I do not admit Dr. King's application of his principles to the explanation of the difficulty of reconciling the divine Prescience with human Freedom, is necessary to be mentioned, for the sake of such of my readers only as have not seen the notes accompanying my edition of his *Sermon*, and may be led to suppose the contrary from a statement in a note to one of Mr. Davison's *Lectures on Prophecy*, in which he attributes to me the adoption of the Archbishop's views on that point. That statement originated entirely in a mistake; as the author (whom I believed to be incapable of wilful misrepresentation) candidly acknowledged to me. The fact is, he had omitted to read my publication, and had attributed those opinions to me merely from conjecture, because they were those of Dr. King. That for several years, Mr. Davison's work should have continued on sale with the error uncorrected, is more than I profess to explain. It was in fact rectified only in a subsequent edition.

My reasons for differing from Archbishop King on the point above-mentioned, are fully stated in the notes to his *Sermon*. But of the soundness and the importance of his general principles, I am the more convinced, because their not having been refuted, certainly

does not proceed from their not being thought worth notice. They have been assailed both formerly, and of late, by numerous and zealous opponents; all of whom have mistaken entirely either the question itself, or Dr. King's view of it. For instance, advantage has been taken of his expressions, that "the divine attributes are *quite unlike ours*," and "altogether different;" which have been taken to mean (either through very culpable carelessness, or something worse) that they have no resemblance at all,—*nothing in common*; and "that, on his principles, the infliction of gratuitous misery may be perfectly consistent with the Divine Mercy:" and it might have been added, with equal fairness, that, on his principles, a contrivance so framed as to defeat its proposed object, would be equally consistent with the Divine Wisdom: all which, as may be seen even from the above quotation, is the very reverse of what Dr. K. does say. He all along dwells on the agreement in the *effects* resulting, from the divine attributes, and from human ones bearing the same names, as the very ground on which those names are so applied: but the *causes* of those effects, he maintains, we have no right to consider as necessarily otherwise similar; inasmuch as the Beings who are the subjects of those attributes are so immensely different.

*This is a mistake (to use the mildest interpretation) of Dr. King's meaning: the question itself* has been, if possible, still more mistaken. It has been contended, for instance, that all exhortations to *imitate* the Deity must be nugatory, if we know not precisely what his attributes are, or regard them as of a different character from the human: as if Solomon's exhortation, "Go to the ant, thou sluggard, consider her ways, and be wise," could not be put in practice unless we were convinced that the proceedings of the insect are directed, not by instinct, but by mental habits, in all respects agreeing with human prudence, and industry.

And as for the words "same" and "similar," so often employed in discussions of this point, so great is the confusion of thought resulting from their ambiguity, and from the general laxity with which they are applied, that it may be allowable to extract from the *Elements of Logic* a passage in which I have attempted to dispel this confusion. (Chap. v. § 1. p. 274—276.) Dr. King, I have there said, "remarked (without expressing himself perhaps with so much guarded precision as the vehemence of his opponents rendered needful) that "the attributes of the Deity (*viz.* Wisdom, Justice, &c.) are not to be regarded as the *same* with those human qualities which bear the *same* names, but are called so by resemblance and analogy only." For this he was decried by Bishop Berkeley and a host of other objectors, down to the present time, as an Atheist, or little better. If the divine attributes, they urged, are not precisely the same in kind (though superior in degree) with the human qualities

which bear the same name, we cannot *imitate* the Deity as the Scriptures require;—we cannot know on what principles we shall be judged;—we cannot be sure that God exists at all; with a great deal more to the same purpose; all of which would have been perceived to be entirely needless, had the authors but recollected to ascertain the meaning of the principal word employed.

“1st, When any two persons (or other objects) are said to have the “*same*” quality, accident, &c., what we predicate of them is evidently a certain *resemblance*, and nothing else. One man, *e. g.*, does not feel *another's* sickness; but they are said to have the “*same*” disease, if they are precisely *similar* in respect of their ailments: and so also they are said to have the same complexion, if the hue and texture of their skins be alike.

“2dly, Such qualities as are entirely *relative*,—which consist in the relation borne by the subject to certain other things,—in these, it is manifest, the only *resemblance* that can exist, is, *resemblance of relations*, *i. e.* ANALOGY. Courage, *e. g.*, consists in the relation in which one stands (*ἐν τῇ ἔχειν πῶς πρὸς*, Arist.) towards dangers; Temperance or Intemperance, towards bodily pleasures, &c.

“When it is said, therefore, of two courageous men, that they have both the *same* quality, the only meaning this expression *can* have, is, that they are, so far, completely *analogous* in their characters;—having similar ratios to certain similar objects. In short, as, in all qualities, *sameness* can mean only strict *resemblance*, so, in those which are of a *relative* nature, *resemblance* can mean only *analogy*.

“Thus it appears, that what Dr. King has been so vehemently censured for asserting respecting the Deity, is literally true even with respect to *men* themselves; *viz.* that it is only by Analogy that two persons can be said to possess the same virtue, or other such quality.

“3dly, But what he means is plainly, that this analogy is far less *exact* and *complete* in the case of a comparison between the Deity and his creatures, than between one man and another; which surely no one would venture to deny. But the doctrine against which the attacks *have* been directed, is self-evident, the moment we consider the meaning of the terms employed.”

This explanation, and the argument founded on it, did appear to me, at the time, perfectly decisive: if however there had been any flaw in the reasoning, I cannot but think (considering the number and the zeal of Dr. King's assailants) that it would before now have been pointed out. Those who may remain unconvinced by it, I despair of satisfying by any argument that I am able to devise.

## NOTE H, page 112.

*Extract from B. White's "Poor Man's Preservative,"  
Second Edition, 1834.<sup>1</sup>*

"I WILL, however, confess to you, that a few years after I became a Protestant, I was strongly tempted in my faith; not; however, as I said before, from any leaning to Romanism, but from a doubt whether the doctrine of the people called *Unitarians*—I mean those who say that Christ was nothing but a man, the son of Joseph and Mary—might not be true. During the examination of this point, though I was not very long in finding that the assertion that Christ was only a highly inspired man, is not scriptural, my old habits of unbelief were roused, and they harassed me severely. Clouds of doubt hovered a long time over my soul, and darkness increased now and then in such a degree that I feared my Christian faith had been extinguished. Had I, in consequence of this disposition to unbelief, either ceased to pray, or returned, as is often the case, to a course of immorality, nothing could have saved me. But the grace of God was secretly at work in me, and whatever doubts I had about the doctrines of the Gospel, I never deemed myself at liberty openly and wilfully to offend against its commandments. I sincerely wished to find the truth; and, distressed as I often was by the difficulties and obscurities which Christian men have raised by their attempts to explain the mysteries of our redemption, yet my knowledge of the vanity and flimsiness of infidelity, made me often turn to Christ, and say (I can assure you I often uttered the words aloud in tears), "To whom shall I go? Thou hast the words of eternal life."<sup>2</sup> Partly from these doubts, and partly from a long and lingering illness which the change of climate had brought upon me, I passed the greatest part of a year without receiving the Sacrament. Had I, as far as it was my own fault, abstained much longer from that appointed means of grace, my spiritual danger would have increased; but, by God's mercy, I examined myself upon that point, and finding that my conscience did not charge me with any true impediment to the reception of the Holy Sacrament; and that, as to the doubts on my mind, they were involuntary, and accompanied with a sincere desire of finding the truth, I presented myself at the sacramental table, with feelings similar to those which I conceived I should have, if, as it was then

---

<sup>1</sup> See also my *Discourse on the Shepherds at Bethlehem*, (published in the Volume of Sermons,) which was submitted to him before it was delivered, and to the doctrine of which he gave his full and hearty approbation.

<sup>2</sup> John, vi. 68.

probable, death had sent me with my doubts, before the judgment-seat of Christ. I threw myself, in fact, wholly upon his mercy. My trust did not prove deceitful: for calm was soon restored to my soul; and I found myself stronger than ever in the faith and profession which I made when I became a member of the Church of England."

This tract the author deliberately *revised* and republished in the year preceding that in which he finally left my house. Not long after the publication, the inroads of disease, which had impaired for several years his bodily powers, began to make themselves more and more apparent in disorder of the intellect: and I received warnings from no less than three respectable physicians, who had been in the habit of attending him, that he was on the verge of insanity. They gave this warning *spontaneously* and *unknown to each other*. And I had, subsequently, the most abundant confirmations of the melancholy fact. It is one which, in an ordinary case, I should have abstained from adverting to: but it is due to the cause of truth, and even to the memory of my deceased friend, to correct any errors that may have gained currency, apparently on his own authority, through the means of what he wrote at a later period, while in an unsound state of mind.

It may be necessary to add, for the sake of some of my readers, that, in those later publications just alluded to, he professes not only to hold, but to have *long held*—during, and long before, the publication of the Tract from which I have given an extract—the very opinions he there so strenuously repudiates. There is therefore manifestly *no alternative*, except the imputation either of *mental disease*, or of gross, deliberate, habitual *falsehood*. If there be any persons who can even hesitate as to which of these is the more discreditable to the memory of the departed, to them I can have no more to say, except to express my hearty wish for a complete renovation of their moral faculties.

---



## ESSAY III.

---

### ON LOVE TOWARDS CHRIST AS A MOTIVE TO OBEDIENCE.

---

IF the Gospel had merely given us the assurance of a future retribution, teaching us at the same time to look for immortal happiness through faith in the meritorious sacrifice of our Redeemer, not as the well-earned reward of our own virtue; yet requiring us to practise virtue nevertheless, as an indispensable condition; and, in addition to moral precepts, holding out a model of superhuman excellence to excite our emulation—it would have been distinguished indeed by many important peculiarities, and it would have contained *every* incentive to holiness of life that some Christian readers attribute to it.<sup>1</sup> But in fact it does much more. The rewards and punishments of the next world do indeed furnish a strong incitement to the practice of duty; the moral precepts of the Scriptures, and still more the example of Christ, help us to ascertain what our duty is;

---

<sup>1</sup> As I have treated in the Second Series (Essay VIII.) of a subject nearly allied both to the one now before us, and also to that of the preceding Essay, and to that of the fifth of the present volume, it may be worth while briefly to notice in this place the distinction between these and the other.

I am speaking, in the present Essay, of a peculiarity in the *motives* employed by the sacred writers for producing moral conduct; and again, in this, in the preceding, and in the fifth, of a peculiarity as to the *examples* they pro-

pose for our imitation and self-instruction.

In the eighth of the other series, I am considering their *mode* of conveying to us the *precepts* of morality.

In all, it is the moral-*instruction* of Scripture that I have been treating of; but, distinctly, of the different parts of which it (and indeed all complete moral-instruction) consists—*viz.*, 1st, the motives inculcated; 2ndly, the Examples proposed; 3rdly, the Precepts delivered.

and the emulation which such a model naturally inspires, affords an additional incentive: but this is not all. It is possible for men to emulate the virtues of one who is personally an utter *stranger* to them; and to profit by his example, though he have no connection with them,—no care or knowledge whether they imitate him or not. But they are much more strongly incited to do this, if they know that the person in question does take an interest in their welfare—is their greatest benefactor—and on *that* ground calls on them to conform to his precepts, and to tread in his steps.

And this we shall find is the case, in a most remarkable degree, in the religion of Jesus Christ. One of its most striking peculiarities is, its continual appeal to the affections; its introducing, as a principal motive to obedience, love towards our heavenly Master. He appeared as “God with us,” and as partaking of our nature, with a view both to display to us an exalted and perfect model of goodness, and also to awaken in us more effectually those feelings of pious and affectionate attachment, which it would be less easy to entertain towards God, considered as the invisible Author and Governor of the universe. In beautiful conformity with this plan, these feelings are required to manifest themselves in a dutiful regard to his will; and on these we are taught that the moral regulation of our lives is to be founded. “If ye love me, keep my commandments,” is our Lord’s injunction, as reported by John in his Gospel;<sup>1</sup> “and this is love,” says the same Evangelist in his general Epistle, “that we walk after his commandments.” Here we have set before us at once the best principle, and the best application of it; the purest motive, and the most perfect practice: here, in short, we are told both what our conduct ought to be, and from what source that conduct ought to spring.

It is undeniable that the very best actions are of no value, unless they proceed from a right principle; and again,

---

<sup>1</sup> Chap. xiv. 15.

that a right principle is utterly barren and unprofitable, unless it lead us to right practice. The Gospel supplies us both with the motive, and the rule; "If ye love me, keep my commandments." This precept therefore is to be considered in two points of view: first, that the love of Christ is the *proper ground* of our obedience—the *reason why* we ought to keep his commandments: secondly, that the proper effect, and sure test of our love for Christ, is, the keeping of his commandments.

§ 2 On each of these points many have fallen into dangerous mistakes; and some indeed have entirely lost sight of both. Persons may be found, who profess a most fervent and zealous love for their Redeemer, yet are so far from giving proof of their love by keeping his commandments, that they seem to consider the very warmth of their feelings—their religious fervour—as an excuse for the carelessness of their practice, and as affording them a kind of licence for indulging their sinful inclinations, or at least, for divesting themselves of all anxious and sedulous *care* in the regulation of their conduct; forgetful of the plain warning given by Christ himself, "Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my father which is in heaven." "Ye are my *friends* if ye *do* all things that I have commanded you." And this perversion of Christianity by some persons has had the effect of inspiring others with an aversion or contempt for all sentiments of affectionate piety;—of bringing into disrepute altogether the Gospel-motive of love towards the Redeemer, as savouring of dangerous fanaticism, and leading to the substitution of enthusiastic feelings, for a virtuous life.

But the perversity of man is no ground either for censuring, or for rejecting, or for seeking to alter and new-model, the word of God; which sufficiently guards those who will but study it fairly, against such abuse of the doctrine before

us. Indeed, one of the most striking peculiarities of our religion, consists in the strong contrast which the preaching of our Lord and his followers presents, in this respect, to most of the systems of religion, which have been devised by men. Rich offerings could not, with Him, as among the Pagans, make amends for a sinful life: neither painful austerities, nor splendid festivals, were by Him allowed to compensate for the want of purity of heart, and subdued passions;<sup>1</sup> no zeal in his service, or readiness even to shed their blood in his cause, would excuse his followers, as it would those of Mahomet, from the performance of their moral duties. "Why," says He, "call ye me Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?" and He declares, that even those who had wrought miracles in his name would be disavowed by Him, if "workers of iniquities."

There are others, on the contrary, driven, probably, (as has just been observed,) by their dread of the extreme above mentioned, into the opposite, who, in the sentiments they utter, or in the conduct of their lives, seem not to consider the love of Christ as a motive (or, at least, not as the best and principal motive) for obedience to his commands; but *content* themselves with dwelling on the rewards and punishments of the next world, and on the folly and danger of sin.

Such persons are undoubtedly right as far as they go; but they do not go far enough. The motives which they urge are not the only, nor the best motives, (though certainly very right, and very powerful ones,) for the practice of Christian duty. It is true, indeed, that *one* of the great purposes for which Christ came into the world, was to reveal to men the certainty of a future state of reward and punishment; and we find Him urging, briefly indeed, but forcibly, the immense importance of our eternal salvation above all worldly goods—the inconceivable happiness of good men

---

<sup>1</sup> See *Essay on Self-Denial*, Second Series.

hereafter, and the hopeless condemnation which awaits the disobedient: "What shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?" He encourages us to despise worldly sufferings for righteousness' sake, by saying, "great is your reward in heaven;" and warns us to beware of displeasing that Being, "who hath power to destroy both body and soul in hell." And his followers hold the same language: they exhort their hearers to strive for "an incorruptible crown;" they tell them, that "the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory that shall be revealed in us:" and, on the other hand, they profess, that, "knowing the terror of the Lord, they persuade men." Yet still it is to be observed, that this language of promise and threatening—this appeal to the *reason* and to the interests of men—is not the prevailing character—not the general tone, as it were,—of the discourses of Christ and his Apostles: at least, not when they are addressing *believers* in Christ.

To those indeed who had any *doubts* of the nature of Christ's mission, or of the reality of the resurrection, they insisted much (as was manifestly necessary) on the certainty, and on the immense importance, of that future life, which our Lord had revealed: but when they were addressing their own disciples, who were familiar with those first rudiments of Christianity, to them, they chiefly insisted on *love* towards Christ, not certainly as a *substitute* for obedience, but as the *foundation* of obedience,—as the great principle on which his followers ought to act—the main-spring of all their conduct. The misery of the bad, and the happiness of the good, hereafter, they all along presuppose and take for granted; but they seem to have regarded these doctrines as the foundation, not the completion—the beginning, not the end—of their system. To the further-advanced and better-instructed Christian, they held out a nobler and purer motive. "If ye love me," says our Lord, "keep my commandments."

“The love of Christ constraineth us,” says Paul; and he adds, as a reason, “that He died for all, that they which live, should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto Him who died for them, and rose again.”<sup>1</sup> And the Apostle John, both in his first Epistle and his Gospel, the latter of which, at least, may be supposed, from the lateness of its date, to have been more particularly addressed to those who were settled in the Christian faith, exhibits the same characteristics in a still more striking manner.

In short, almost all the exhortations of the New-Testament writers are grounded on the infinite mercies of our great Instructor and Redeemer towards us, and on the gratitude, love, and reverence, which we ought to feel towards Him in return. To our hopes and fears, indeed, they appeal incidentally and occasionally; but the sentiment which they are continually striving to excite and keep alive in us, and which is the main-spring of their whole moral system, is, a strong sense of the greatness and the goodness of our Saviour, and a fervent zeal in adoring and serving Him, who did and suffered so much for us.

To prove and illustrate what has now been affirmed, as fully as might be done, would be to transcribe the greater part of the apostolic epistles; the more any one examines them, the more he will perceive that their general tone and character is such as has been described.

§ 3 Now let any one compare such language as this with the ideas which some Christian writers seem to entertain, and the language they use, and he will perceive, that, though undeniably just and right, they are very imperfect, and very far from resembling the model of Scripture. Such men are contented with the considerations that life is short, and death certain;—that all men must hereafter be judged before an all-seeing God, who will not fail to reward the

---

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. v. 14.

good and punish the bad;—that the greatest worldly goods and evils are mere trifles in comparison of our eternal happiness or misery; and that therefore it is the height of folly to be negligent in the performance of our duty, or in avoiding temptations to sin; since these are the points which most deserve our attention, if we have any rational regard for our own welfare. Nothing can be more true than all this; and Christians are intended, no doubt, most seriously to take it to heart, and act constantly in conformity with such principles. But still these, as has been said, are not the only nor the highest principles on which a Christian should act: these arguments are what every Christian teacher ought to employ, but to which he should not confine himself; at least, if he would imitate the tone of the Gospel. These topics indeed being almost entirely drawn from what is commonly called “natural religion,” (as far at least as that is supposed to hold out any probability of a future state,) it follows of course, that to dwell exclusively on these, is to omit great part of what is peculiar to Christianity; and thus to lose sight of one very striking and characteristic feature of it; a feature constituting one of those peculiarities, the neglect or depreciation of which is so common, and so carefully to be guarded against.

Human ethics and natural religion may be sufficient to satisfy the understanding as to the nature and the claims of virtue; but to engage the feelings on the same side, belongs in an especial manner to the Gospel. It is necessary indeed to convince men’s reason, and to point out to them their true interest; but Christ and his followers were not satisfied with this; they knew that it is in vain the reason is convinced, if the heart be not warmed; and that man will not follow his own interests, if all his affections lie the other way. That this should be the case with rational Beings, is the great paradox which we in vain endeavour to explain, though daily experience compels us to acknowledge it. And to find a remedy for this weakness—to induce men to pursue the line

of conduct which their own sober judgment admits to be the best—has been attempted by all moralists; though not very successfully, and not always judiciously. Our Lord and his followers, who “knew what was in man,” were well aware that such a Being could not be practically influenced by an appeal to his understanding alone. They did not therefore make religion a matter of mere prudent calculation, but of affectionate zeal. When Christ was committing to Simon Peter the care of the beloved flock which he had himself redeemed, He meant him indeed to understand, no doubt, that he would be punished if he neglected this charge, and that great would be the reward of diligent obedience; but these were not the topics He chose to insist upon: “Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me?” Peter replied, “Lord, thou knowest that I love thee;” Jesus said unto him, “Feed my sheep.” Thrice was this injunction given, and thrice was the appeal made, not to the hopes and fears, but to the *affections*, of the Apostle.

In like manner, the Apostle Paul, in exhorting the Churches, alludes *occasionally* only to the rewards and punishments of a future state, and the folly of not preparing for it; but he insists *continually* on the mercies which God has *already* shown us, and the gratitude we ought to feel for them; and strives to fill us with an earnest desire of pleasing Him, and an abhorrence of sin, as odious in his sight. For example, when he tells the Colossians “to forgive one another, if any man have a quarrel against any,” it is on this ground, “even as Christ forgave you:” and again, “Children, obey your parents in all things, for this is *well-pleasing unto the Lord*.” And again, “Be ye followers of God, as *dear children*; and walk in love, as Christ also hath *loved us*, and hath *given Himself* for us.”

From these and innumerable similar passages, it is sufficiently evident, that the Christian, if he would listen to and imitate the teaching of Christ and his Apostles, must not be contented to dwell merely on the rewards and punishments



of the next world, and the importance of striving for the one, and guarding against the other, (though these should be ever present to his mind;) but he must also endeavour to “set his *affection* on things above;”—to fill his heart with the love of Christ—with admiration for the blended majesty and loveliness displayed in his sojourning on earth—with gratitude not only for that greatest and most prominent work, the Redemption by Him, but also for his condescending goodness in visiting his people in the flesh, to declare to them the invisible God;—and with an active zeal to serve Him as perfectly as possible, in *proof* of his reverence and affection. These are the prevailing and principal motives in the mind of a sincere Christian: these are what our Lord and his followers were the most anxious to instil into the hearts of their disciples.

§ 4 The views (again) which the sacred writers give of the rewards prepared for the faithful in the next life, (dim and imperfect as they are,) correspond in the most natural and striking manner with their mode of inculcating Christian duty. And those persons whose topics of exhortation on this latter point are exclusively addressed to the head, and not to the heart, labour under a corresponding defect in their manner of speaking of future happiness; their views of which, accordingly, are, as well as their moral precepts, needlessly dry, unattractive, and uninteresting to the feelings. They keep out of sight, throughout, the *personal* character of our religion, and of every thing connected with it: *i. e.* its continual reference to *persons*, and especially to that Great Person who is the Author of it, rather than to mere abstract *things*. While they dwell, in delineating and enforcing duty, exclusively on the excellence and advantage of a virtuous life—of obeying the dictates of a well-regulated conscience—of walking in the path of moral rectitude, and the like—they speak also in a corresponding tone of the infinite value of an eternity of happiness; of being freed

from the evils and imperfections of our present state ; of escaping the horrors of endless remorse ; and of being exalted into a new and superior condition ; with much of the same kind, that is perfectly true indeed, and deserving of being kept in mind, but which is far less *interesting* (when such topics are dwelt on exclusively) than the continual reference to *persons*, which we find in the sacred writers.

As Paul's favourite exhortations (if I may so speak) to personal holiness, whether he is directing our views to future reward, or to the other incentive just mentioned, consist in a reference, of some sort or other, to Jesus Christ ; so, his allusions to that reward itself are of a corresponding character. On the one hand, in the inculcation of virtue, he dwells, as has been just remarked, on the example Jesus left us, that "we should walk in his steps ;" he speaks of "walking in love, as Christ also hath loved us ;"—of "putting on Christ ;"—of being "buried *with Him* in baptism ;"—of being "risen with Christ ;"—of doing "what is well-pleasing to the Lord Jesus Christ ;"—of our being "followers of him (Paul) even as he is of Christ ;" and the like : not speaking so often of *Christian virtue* in the abstract, as he does of it embodied, as it were, exemplified, represented, *personified*, in Jesus Christ ; "*looking unto Jesus*, the Author and finisher of our faith," at every step. And on the other hand, his language in speaking of the Christian's *hopes*, corresponds with that concerning Christian *duties* : he does not speak so much of eternal happiness *in the abstract*, as of the happiness of an intimate union with our great Master ; to die is, with him, to "depart and *to be with Christ* ;" after "having suffered with Him, to reign also *with Him* ;" of "the crown of glory, which He, the righteous Lord, has prepared for all that *love his appearing* : " and his encouragement to the Thessalonians is, "so shall we ever be *with the Lord*." And this tone is the more remarkable in the expressions of Paul, from the circumstance that he was not, like the other Apostles, personally acquainted with Jesus while on earth.

Thus also the Evangelist John (as well befitted the beloved disciple) places both all Christian perfection in conformity to the pattern, and all happiness and glory in admission to the presence, of our great Master; “we know not what we shall be; but we know, that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him, for we shall see Him as He is.” And our Lord’s own language is of the same tone: as the motive He seeks to implant in the disciple’s breast is, as has been said, love, gratitude, and reverence for Himself, so the encouragement He sets before them, is the hope, not merely of happiness in the abstract, but of intimate union and close intercourse with Himself: “If ye love me, keep my commandments.” “If a man love me, he will keep my saying, and my Father will love him, and *we will come unto him*, and make our abode with him.” “I will not leave you comfortless; I will *come unto you*.” “That *where I am*, there ye may be also,” &c.

All this is admirably suited both to what man *is*, and to what he *ought* to be. As emulation is a natural principle, and a good example accordingly is more instructive and more impressive than the best general maxims, so, the thought, whom we are *to live with*—for what sort of *society* we are to fit ourselves, affects the mind much more strongly than any general description of what that life itself shall be. That the chief part of the happiness therefore which is prepared for the faithful in a better world, is to consist in a more perfect knowledge of our Redeemer, and closer intercourse with Him, serves on the one hand to interest, and encourage, and delight the right-minded Christian, and to admonish, and warn, and incite, one who is not such. This world being, as we are taught, not merely a state of *trial*, but also of *preparation*, no precepts can be so advantageous to us with this view, as to be told what sort of society it is *for which* we are required to prepare ourselves. No general rules, however copious and precise, can equal the combined effect of the example of a particular *person* set before us, together with a notice that for

his society we are required to endeavour to qualify ourselves. And accordingly John adds, immediately after the passage just cited, "Every one that hath *this hope* in Him, purifieth himself even *as HE is pure*."

§ 5 This mode of moral training, adopted by Christ and his Apostles, is among those peculiarities of the Gospel-system which most demand our admiration. The motives which they inculcated, were both the most effectual, and also the most pure and elevated; their plan of endeavouring to win over the affections—to gain the hearts—of their converts, was not only the most likely to make men perform their duty, but also made that duty itself more acceptable.

If it be possible for any one to become what is commonly called "a good moral man," wholly and solely from perceiving that it is his *interest* to be so, because he will be rewarded if he does right, and punished if he does wrong, still his service will not only be very cold and heartless, but also very deficient; he will be wanting in alacrity of duty—in abhorrence of sin—in love for his best friend—in gratitude towards his highest benefactor. No one would much prize a friend (or rather he would be reckoned unworthy of the name) who felt no regard for him, but did him service merely because he perceived it was for his own interest, and that he should be a sufferer if he neglected him. Nor will Christ accept this kind of service from his followers. He requires them to give up their hearts to Him, and to obey Him, not merely as "servants," but as "friends" and as affectionate children. None of their duties, though ever so well performed, are pleasing in his sight, unless they proceed from a love, reverence, and gratitude towards Him, similar to that which we feel for a most excellent parent. "Ye are my friends," says He, "if ye do whatsoever I command you; henceforth I call you not servants,—but I have called you friends." And again, "Whosoever shall do the will

of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.”<sup>1</sup>

In reality, however, it is hardly possible, that a man *can* be virtuous in other respects who is destitute of these feelings. Many objects there are in this world which will always engage our affections very strongly: if then *none* of our *feelings* are engaged on the side of our religious duties—no part of our affections fixed on our Redeemer—can it be expected, that calm reasoning and cool calculation will alone be sufficient to keep us steady and active in our duty, in opposition to so many lively emotions,—in preference to so many tempting objects? No prudent man will trust to such a plan in the education of youth. Men are not satisfied with pointing out to a young person the necessity of being diligent in his business, inasmuch as on that depends his subsistence, and all his hopes of wealth and distinction; but they strive also to inspire him with a *love* for his employment—a *taste* for his profession, whatever it may be. They know that sentiments of this kind will be his best safeguard against the many temptations to indolence and dissipation. Surely the path of Christian duty is not beset with *fewer* temptations; nor is it *less* necessary, in this far greater concern, to engage the feelings on the right side.

Christ and his Apostles knew human nature too well not to perceive this; when, therefore, they had convinced the reason of men, their next endeavour was to mend their hearts. Those warm affections which God has implanted in our breasts, and which were never meant to be rooted out, *they* strove to fix on the most suitable and the noblest objects; well aware, that when this is accomplished, men will not merely know their duty, but practise it with zeal, and spirit, and pleasure. They well knew, that a cold

---

<sup>1</sup> May not this expression of our Lord's, and also another, (Luke xi. 28,) have been intended partly as a warning against the Romish error, of deifying (as it may fairly be called) the Virgin Mary? See *Sermon* [IX.] *on the Marriage in Cana*.

address to the understanding—a mere chain of arguments—serves rather to make men acknowledge what they ought to do, than to excite them actually to do it. It may lead them to *think* rightly about religion, but not to *feel* and *act* rightly. It is like the moon-light, clear indeed and beautiful, but powerless and cold; *their* teaching, on the contrary, was like the light of the sun, which warms while it illuminates, and not only adorns but fertilizes the earth.

For it must never be forgotten, (as, indeed, has been already observed,) that it is in vain the affections are excited, if the practice is not improved; it is in vain that the artificer heats and melts his metal, if he neglects to mould it into the proper form. Indeed, those who do not live a Christian life may, indeed, from that very circumstance, be assured, that they *have not true, genuine, and steady* Christian feelings. Sudden and short bursts of devout fervour will not produce a uniform, careful, and active course of virtue; but a rational and deep-fixed love of God undoubtedly will. A man may deceive both others and himself by extravagant language and enthusiastic emotions, which may pass for proofs of more than ordinary holiness; but he cannot so deceive Christ; who has sufficiently taught us, that He will expect good conduct as the *fruit* of good sentiments—the keeping of his commandments, as the *proof* of our loving Him sincerely.

No man, indeed, would ever be deceived in any other similar case. He would well know how to estimate the pretended affection of one, who should profess the warmest regard for him, yet pay no attention to his wishes, and use no exertions in his service; but *act* rather like an *enemy* than a friend. And as such a person would be regarded by men, so will those be in the sight of God, who profess to love Him, and yet neglect to obey Him.

To the above considerations it should be added, that the Christian's service, grounded on such motives, is not only more perfect, and also more acceptable, than any others

could produce, but likewise (when the habit is in some degree formed) incomparably less burdensome, and more pleasing. Indeed, even in the affairs of this world, the *affectionate* parent, child, husband, wife, and friend, know, by experience, how greatly *Love* lightens every task: and those who will “come unto Christ,” with such feelings as He merits and demands, will find experimentally, that “his yoke is easy, and his burden light:” they will “find rest unto their souls,” if, in answer to that question, which he asks alike of all his followers, “Lovest thou me?” they can answer, with sincerity and truth, “Lord, thou knowest that I love thee.”

§ 6 If the view which has been here taken of this subject be correct, it follows that Christianity stands distinguished from all systems of religion, or of philosophy, which unaided reason can devise, no less by the motives to which it appeals—the frame of mind from which it requires moral conduct to spring—than by those other peculiarities formerly mentioned. For a rational and firm assurance of a future resurrection to immortality, we must resort to the Gospel;—for the hopes of eternal happiness, we must look to Him, who has not only announced but purchased it;—for such a manifestation of the Godhead as may excite us to affectionate Piety; and for such a model of human Virtue as may be securely imitated—we shall vainly seek, except in the Gospel; and it is there also, and there alone, that we find morality inculcated, not only on the ground of those promises and threatenings which it sets before us, but also of those affections which it is so remarkably and peculiarly calculated to excite.

If mere external acts of duty were all that is required, this kind of precept would still be far superior to a mere appeal to men’s reason, and would produce a larger amount of good conduct: much greater, then, will its superiority appear, when we consider how much nobler and more in-

trinsically valuable is that good conduct which springs from a pious, and grateful, and affectionate heart.

Let no one, then, lose sight of, or undervalue, these admirable, these divine peculiarities of our religion, which furnish the only effectual means of counteracting the weakness of man's nature. Let no one, under pretence of laying a firm foundation of Natural-Religion, render the superstructure of Christianity insignificant, by attributing to natural-religion what Revelation alone can furnish: and, above all, let us not—carelessly blind to those splendid characteristics which distinguish it—confound this religion with the various systems of philosophical speculation, or of popular superstition, which have successively occupied mankind; but keep our eye steadfastly fixed, as it were, on the Star which stands over the holy Infant at Bethlehem; and which has no fellow in the firmament.

But though enough is revealed to us in Scripture to instruct us in our duty, and to incite us to the practice of it, there is much also that is *not* revealed, which many, at least, would be eagerly desirous to know. It suppresses much of what some vainly seek to find in it, or complain of not finding;—which all pretended revelations profess, and might be expected to profess, to make known;—and which a true revelation, and none but a true one, might be expected to omit. The peculiarity in our religion, which is here alluded to, will form the subject of the next Essay.

---



## ESSAY IV.

---

### ON THE PRACTICAL CHARACTER OF REVELATION.

---

THAT the revelation which our Scriptures afford is, in many points, imperfect and limited, and that they themselves represent it as such,—that we “now know in part,” and “see by means of a mirror, darkly,”—must be evident even to a careless reader. And scarcely less plain is the connexion continually forced on our notice, in Scripture, between knowledge and practice; as, in the reiterated injunctions to the Israelites to make a right use of the revelation which had been granted them, by “doing all the words of this law;”—in our Lord’s comparison of one who “hears his words and does them not” (which plainly implies his teaching to relate to something to be *done*), to a man building his house on the sand;—in his declaration that he had made *known* to his disciples (John xv. 15) his Father’s will, to exalt them from the rank of servants to that of *friends*, provided they should *do* what He commanded; and, in short, in almost every part of our Lord’s discourses, and those of his Apostles. But the combination of these two circumstances, and the important and strikingly characteristic feature of our religion, which, when thus in conjunction, they exhibit, is often, in a great degree, overlooked. The peculiar feature which I allude to, consists in this; that not only, of the designs and attributes of the Almighty, there are some which He has vouchsafed to make known to Man by revelation, and others which He has thought fit to keep secret, but also, those which *are* revealed, have some *relation* to Man,—

some reference to human conduct,—and are, in some way or other, of a practical character.

Now, since it is undeniable that there have been, and are, many systems of false religion in the world, all of which profess to reveal something as to the nature of God and his dealings with his creatures, this circumstance is frequently dwelt upon by those who studiously endeavour to confound all religions together, with a view to hold up all to equal contempt, as so many various systems of imposture and delusion. And others again, though they do not absolutely reject our religion, are yet so far misled by this fallacy, as to regard it with indifference. It will be worth while therefore to examine attentively the point above mentioned; I mean, the exclusively *practical* character which I have attributed to our revelation; and to inquire more fully whether it is likely to constitute an important and distinguishing feature in any professed revelation which may possess it: in other words, whether the abstaining from *points of mere curiosity*, be a probable *mark of a true revelation*.

This inquiry falls naturally under two heads; first, whether or not a *pretended* revelation is likely to contain any matters which are interesting to curiosity alone, and have no reference to practice; and secondly, whether this is likely to be the case with a *true* revelation.

The former of these questions we need not hesitate, I think, to answer in the affirmative.

That the desire of knowledge, for its own sake, is a part of our nature, is a truth so obvious, as hardly to need being insisted on. For though it is common to hear men imply the contrary, by asking contemptuously, in the case of some pursuit for which they happen to have no relish, “What is the *use* of learning this or that? What advantage is to be derived from such and such a branch of knowledge?” yet the very same persons, if some discovery be the next moment announced to them, of a different kind, which may happen to fall in with their own taste, will probably be found to

manifest the liveliest interest, and the most eager curiosity, even where they would be at a loss to point out what practical benefit they are likely to derive from it. So far indeed is utility from being the sole standard of value in men's minds, that even such knowledge as *is* useful, is in general sought more for its own sake, than with a view to utility; nor are men ever more eager in the pursuit of it, than when they have no further object to occupy them. "Accordingly," as is justly observed by an ancient writer, who well understood human nature, "when we are at leisure from the cares of necessary business, then are we eager to see, to hear, to learn, something; regarding the knowledge of what is hidden, or of what is admirable, as an essential ingredient of happiness."<sup>1</sup> He is quite right in the circumstances fixed on as most exciting our interest; things *hidden*, and things *admirable*, being what men especially covet to know. Now nothing can be more hidden, nothing more admirable, than the nature, and the works, of God. The origin and constitution of the world we inhabit—of the rest of that vast system of which it forms a part—and of man himself—the nature of various orders of Beings which may exist, superior to man, and of the Supreme Being Himself—each of these subjects suggests innumerable matters of inquiry, whose grandeur fills the most exalted, and whose difficulty baffles the most intelligent, mind. Is it not then natural, that men should eagerly seek for some superhuman means of information on subjects so interesting to their curiosity, and so much beyond their unaided powers? and is it not consequently to be expected, that both the devices of an impostor, and the visions of an enthusiast, should abound in food for this curiosity?—that the one should seek for proselytes by professing to communicate what men are so desirous of knowing; and that the other should be altogether occupied with those questions to which the imagination of men is so

---

<sup>1</sup> Cicero *de Officiis*, b. i.

naturally turned, till a diseased fancy mistakes its day-dreams for a revelation?

§ 2 Such, I say, is what we might be prepared, from the nature of Man, to expect; and if we consult history, we find our conjecture fully borne out by facts. In all those other religions, and in all those modifications of our own, which we attribute to the imagination or to the artifice of Man, the pretended revelations not only abound with matters of speculative curiosity, unconnected with practice, but are sometimes even principally made up of them, so as to appear to have for their chief object the communication of knowledge concerning heavenly things, for its own sake.

To illustrate this by a full examination of all the various systems of false revelation, would be manifestly both tedious and unnecessary: tedious, inasmuch as even a brief sketch of them would occupy a considerable volume; and unnecessary, for most readers, since a few moments' recollection will enable them to recall from their previous knowledge enough to confirm, to a great degree at least, the remark which has just been made. And the conclusion will be more strengthened, the further the inquiry is pursued.

Let any one consider, for instance, the Greek and Roman mythology: what is the character of that infinite number of fables, delivered by pretenders either to immediate inspiration, or to traditional knowledge of revelation, respecting the genealogies of their deities,—their transformations,—their contests,—their adventures on earth? Our present business is not with the absurdity of these fables, or with their immoral tendency, or their want of evidence, or the degree of credit they obtained: let our attention be confined to the single circumstance of their general want of *reference to human conduct*—their being principally calculated to attract and amuse an inquisitive mind. It is true, indeed, that direct practical precepts and examples, (whether correct or not, is a question foreign to the present subject,) do form some part of the

Pagan religions ; but by no means the greatest or most prominent part ; and it is speaking far within compass to say, that most of what the ancients were taught respecting their gods, could not even be imagined to be of any practical importance, but related merely to the gratification of curiosity.

If we examine the pretended revelations of the Hindoos and of other modern Pagans, we find the very same principle exhibited in other forms. The names and the achievements of their gods are different, but the general character is the same ; the leading object, or, at least, one leading object, in both, is to gratify men's *curiosity* about the nature and the operations of superior agents—about the state of things in another world.

If we turn from these apocryphal and undigested heaps of fabulous tradition, to the more systematic imposture of Mahomet, a man doubtless of no mean ability,—who had the advantage of borrowing from Judaism and from Christianity whatever might suit his purpose, and who certainly understood, as experience has proved, the art of alluring converts,—we shall find our expectations as to the point in question still confirmed. Not that the Koran is wanting in moral precept and exhortation ; for it abounds in them to the most tedious minuteness of detail ; but it also abounds with the most elaborate descriptions of heaven and of its inhabitants, and of other (pretended) works of God ; with full and circumstantial narratives of the creation of the world, and of various other transactions ascribed to the Deity, all calculated to gratify the prying—one might even say, the impertinent—curiosity of man respecting divine mysteries ; but so utterly unconnected with human duties, that the mere increase of knowledge, for its own sake, as an ultimate end, is made to appear one principal object of this pretended revelation.

It would be wearisome and disgusting to introduce such specimens as would fully illustrate what has been asserted ; though it is scarcely possible adequately to describe in words how forcibly it will be impressed on the mind on actual

perusal, that the prevailing character of the book in question is such as has been described. But those who will be at the pains to examine this and other pretended revelations, with an express view to the subject of our present inquiry, will meet with abundant instances to confirm what has been here advanced; more than they perhaps are aware of, if they have a mere general acquaintance with those systems, but have never considered them with reference to the particular point now before us. Such an inquiry, it may be safely affirmed, would be profitable and satisfactory, if fully pursued; and would communicate a lively interest to the perusal even of the most absurd reveries of heathen mythology, and of the Koran. But it will be sufficient in this place to have suggested some of the principal points towards which the inquiry should be directed.

In addition to those pretended revelations which have been the basis of distinct religions, we should also turn our attention to those which have been connected with modifications of our own. Not to dwell on the fables of the Jewish Talmud, which may fairly be placed under this head, and which will be found to correspond with the principle originally laid down,—thus proving, among other things, that the Jewish nation had, of themselves, in an eminent degree, the same taste in respect of these matters as the Gentiles,—what a multitude of idle legends do we meet with in the Greek and Romish Churches, that have no more reference to practice than the heathen mythology! I speak not now of the extravagance and impiety of many of them; nor of the *too great* reference to conduct of some others, whose tendency is to recommend a life of useless seclusion, or of superstitious self-torture, in preference to active virtue:<sup>1</sup> but a large portion of them have no conceivable reference to conduct whatever, and are fitted merely to amuse the roving imagination, and gratify the presumptuous curiosity of the credulous.

---

<sup>1</sup> See Essay X. Second Series.

Lastly, to advert to a more recent instance, look to the visions of the pretended prophet Swedenborg; himself the dupe, as is generally supposed, of a distempered fancy. It is well known, that he professed to have been favoured with most copious and distinct revelations—to have visited the celestial abodes, and to have conversed with various orders of Beings; of all which he gives minute descriptions. Yet though his followers insist much on the importance of believing in this pretended revelation, it would, I believe, be difficult for them to state even any one point, in which a man is called upon to alter either his conduct, his motives, or his moral sentiments, in consequence of such belief. The system furnishes abundant matter of faith, and food for curiosity; but has little or no intelligible reference to practice.<sup>1</sup>

§ 3 Such then being the character of false revelations, what may we expect from a true one? Since both reason and experience show, that it is the obvious policy of an impostor, and the most natural delusion of a visionary, to treat much of curious and hidden matters, relative to the divine operations, beyond what is conducive to practical

---

<sup>1</sup> I received some time ago a friendly communication from a person of this persuasion, referring to the above passage, and complaining of the current misrepresentations respecting the doctrines of the Swedenborgians. He set forth, in a brief outline, their fundamental points of faith, and principles of duty; which were—as he studiously pointed out to me—*essentially in agreement with what is held by our own Church.*

From his *own account*, therefore, it appears, (as I pointed out in reply,) that the point *peculiar* to that sect—the supposed revelation to their founder,—in which they believe, is entirely of a *non-practical* character. Now this is precisely what I was maintaining.

I was not designing any attack on that, or on any other religious persuasion; nor do I deny its including the fundamentals of Christianity. I had in view only what *distinguishes* the followers of Swedenborg from the rest of the Christian world; *viz.*, their faith in a revelation which the rest hold to be a delusion. The truth or falsity of that revelation—a question on which, of course, I must differ from them—is one which I had no intention of discussing. But that, whether true or false, it is at least distinguished from the revelation contained in the Gospel, by leading to no practical conclusions, is a point, it seems, on which both parties are agreed. And this is the only point I had in view.

instruction, it should next be considered whether the case is likely to be the same with a real revelation; whether *that* also is likely to be much occupied in ministering to speculative curiosity. Now this question we may on good grounds answer in the negative. For, the *general* rule of Providence evidently is, that man should be left to supply his own wants, and seek knowledge, both practical and speculative, by the aid of those faculties which have been originally bestowed on him; a revelation is an extraordinary and miraculous *exception* to this general rule; and it seems therefore reasonable to conclude, that it should be bestowed for some very important purpose. Now, the knowledge of our duty, beyond what is discoverable by unaided reason—instruction how we are to serve God, and obtain his favour—does seem a sufficiently important purpose; but not so, the mere gratification of curiosity. The desire of knowledge is indeed implanted in us by our Creator; and the pursuit of it is an innocent, and honourable, and highly pleasurable employment of our faculties: but there is a sufficiently wide field of investigation within the reach of our natural faculties; there seems no reason why the Almighty should work a miracle for the increase of our mere speculative knowledge: not to mention that our gratification consists more in the *pursuit* and *acquirement*, by our own efforts, of such knowledge, than in the *possession* of it.

Whatever therefore it concerns us practically to know, with a view to the regulation of the heart and conduct—whatever God requires us to be, and to do, in order to become acceptable in his sight—this, it seems consonant to his justice and goodness to declare to us by revelation, when of ourselves we are incompetent to discover it; but that He should miraculously reveal any thing besides this for the gratification of an inquisitive mind, there seems no good reason to expect.

It may be said indeed, that the trial of our faith, humility, and candour, in assenting, on sufficient authority, to mys-



terious doctrines, is a worthy and fit purpose, for which such doctrines may be revealed. This is undoubtedly true; and the purpose may even be fairly reckoned a practical one, since so good a moral effect results from such belief. If therefore none of the doctrines necessary to be revealed for *other* practical purposes were of such a mysterious character as to serve for trials of faith also, we might perhaps expect that some things should be proposed to our belief, solely and singly for this latter purpose. But if both objects can be fully accomplished by the same revelation—if our faith be sufficiently tried by the admission of such mysterious doctrines as are important for other practical ends also—then, the revelation of any further mysteries, which lead to no such practical end, is the less necessary, and consequently the less to be expected.<sup>1</sup>

What then is in this respect the character of our religion? It may safely be asserted that it is precisely such as, we have seen, a true revelation might be expected to be: that it teaches us what is needful for us to know, but little or nothing besides; that the information it imparts is such as concerns the regulation of our character and practice, but leaves our curiosity unsatisfied.

Those who are sufficiently conversant with the Scriptures, will at once recognise this as a characteristic feature of them.

---

<sup>1</sup> "All religious inquiry, strictly speaking, is directed to the nature of God *as connected with man*, or again to the nature and condition of man *as connected with God*. Metaphysical discussions on the Divine nature, similar to those in which an attempt is made to analyze or arrange the principles of the human mind, are sometimes indeed confounded with religious views, but are really compatible with the most complete denial of all religion. Religious obligation arises not from the absolute nature of God,

but from its relation to us. Accordingly, Epicurus and his followers were content to admit the existence of a divine Being, as a philosophical truth, provided it was granted that he had no connexion with the world. Now much of the speculation of the philosophers was directed to this object, that is, to the absolute nature of God. It was indeed the chief, because it seemed the more scientific inquiry, and the other was only incidental."—Hinds' *History of the Rise and Progress of Christianity*, Introd. pp. 31, 32.

To prove the point in question as fully as might be done, would require a detailed examination of the whole Bible: and such an examination diligently conducted with a view to the particular point before us, is one which may be recommended not merely to professed theological students, but (since it calls for no great ingenuity or learning) to Christian readers in general; as neither an unprofitable nor unpleasant inquiry, to him who delights in contrasting the wisdom and the dignified simplicity of God's word, with the idle and arrogant pretensions of human fraud and folly.

The general practical tendency of the Scripture-revelations, and their omission of every thing that would serve merely to pamper vain curiosity, will not fail to strike any candid reader in the course of such an examination. It will be sufficient in this place to suggest a few hints respecting the principles on which this inquiry should be conducted.

§ 4 I. In the first place we should bear in mind what parts of the Bible are to be regarded as strictly and properly bearing the character of *Revelation*. A great part of it is historical; and though we believe the sacred historians to have been under the guidance of the Holy Spirit to lead them into all necessary religious truth—to guard them against any material error—and, in some few cases, to inform them of what could not be known by human means—yet the very nature of History is such, that it would be unreasonable to expect to find each single event that is narrated to be a matter of high importance. The age and name, for example, of any one Jewish king, as it is not, so far as we can see, a point of itself necessary to be known as essential to our religion, so, neither is it properly a point of miraculous revelation; it is a part of the *history*; and if that history, *taken collectively*, be, as it is, highly instructive, and illustrative of those divine dispensations in which we are concerned, it must be allowed to possess sufficiently that practical character which we are authorized to expect.

As for those parts which necessarily imply a supernatural communication made to the writer, such as, for example, the account of the Creation of the World, nothing is more striking than their uncircumstantial brevity, which leaves the curiosity of the reader altogether unsatisfied. This circumstance has indeed been sometimes complained of, and even, with a strange perversity, urged as an objection against Scripture, on the ground that an inspired writer must have had it in his *power* to satisfy them as to the detail of these interesting events; and that consequently it was to be expected of him. Now had Moses been an impostor, undoubtedly he would, with such a knowledge of human nature as he plainly manifests, have obviated this objection (as Mahomet has done) by inventing abundance of circumstances; but for a *true* revelation to forestall the discoveries of Astronomy and Geology, was neither necessary nor proper. Being no part of Religion, they are altogether foreign from the purposes of revelation. It is indeed of the highest importance in a religious point of view, to be assured that the earth, with its various races of inhabitants, together with the rest of the universe, are neither eternal, nor the work of chance, or of any non-intelligent agent, or of *various* creative powers; but that One God is the Author of all: thus much accordingly is clearly revealed: but innumerable circumstances, which it does not concern us to know, though they strongly interest our curiosity, are suppressed. Now this, we contend, is a mark of a true revelation; since in that, and in that alone, it is to be expected.

The complaint has indeed been urged, that not only the true account of physical phenomena has been suppressed, but also that wrong notions respecting them have been conveyed. But he who can seriously object to the want of philosophical correctness in such passages, for example, as those which speak of the rising and setting of the sun, should recollect, that when occasion called for an allusion to such matters, unless language conformable to the popular ideas

had been employed, one of two alternatives must have been adopted; either men must have been fully instructed by revelation in the Newtonian system, or they must have been addressed in a style which, though in itself correct, would have been to them utterly unintelligible. Whether either of these modes of procedure would have been better suited to the object of a revelation than the one adopted, we may leave the objector to determine. But if we compare, as to this point, the Bible with the pretended revelation of Mahomet, we shall be struck with the contrast: for *he* goes out of his way, as it were, to assert *gratuitously*, and with distinct particularity, many points of the astronomical theory which prevailed in his time; and thus expressly commits himself as to the truth of an erroneous system.<sup>1</sup>

II. Another circumstance to be kept in view in the proposed examination is, that when we may be at a loss to understand the *ultimate* purpose of any part of our revelation, still, if we perceive an *immediate* purpose that is practical, we must be careful not to confound this case with that of a supposed revelation which has no perceptible purpose at all: if, in short, it be plain, that something is to be done in consequence of what is revealed, even though we may not understand why that particular duty *should* be enjoined, still the revelation is evidently practical; and is, therefore, conformable to the principle above laid down. For example, nothing can be more evidently practical than the whole of what was revealed to Moses respecting the Jewish ritual: for though we may not understand for what reasons the Jews were commanded to perform such and such ceremonies, yet that there was something to be *performed*, is undeniable.

III. Lastly, we should consider, that some parts of revelation may have a practical importance relative to some par-

---

<sup>1</sup> As, for instance, where he speaks of the East and West as *determinate points* in the globe, in the same manner as the North and South Poles are.

ticular times, persons, and circumstances, but not to all. For example, many of the prophetic visions and declarations pertaining to the kingdom of the Messiah, must have been very obscure as to their true purport, till they were cleared up by his advent; but *then*, they furnished both a proof and an explanation of his religion. In like manner, also, many similar prophecies, both in the Old and New Testament, may be designed to answer the same purpose hereafter, when the appointed period shall arrive, which is to bring with it, at once their fulfilment, their explanation, and their practical use.<sup>1</sup> Others, on the contrary, which are now among the most obscure, may have been both intelligible and edifying to many of the contemporaries of the prophets themselves, for whose use they may have been (as in many instances we plainly see they were) principally designed.

But it is very observable, that in most of those cases where we are least able to perceive the practical advantage of the revelation given, the very obscurity and indistinctness which are complained of serve as a confirmation of the point maintained: for these obscure passages *excite* curiosity indeed, but do not *gratify* it: the very objection which some bring against them is, not that too much is revealed, with a

---

<sup>1</sup> "From Adam until Christ, the religious knowledge of the world was like the gradual dawning of light which precedes the sunrise, and from which we infer the existence and anticipate the approach of the sun itself. Christ came; but his coming was as when the sun has risen in mist and cloud, and can scarcely be discerned. And then came the Holy Spirit, like the breath of heaven which blows aside the cloud, and enables us to look upon the source of all the day-light with which we have been gradually blessed. So, also, our present condition as a Church may have some latent connexion with futurity, which we shall then only be qualified to perceive, when God shall again

manifest Himself, and we 'see Him even as He is.'"—Hinds' *History of the Rise and Progress of Christianity*, vol. i. part ii. ch. i. p. 148.

"The Apostles themselves, perhaps, saw not the full operation and progressive results of their own plans; and we, at this moment, may be cherishing among the rites and ordinances of Christianity some, the full effect of which it may be reserved to future times—to a period beyond this world—to develop. It is impossible to say, how far we are living by faith and not by sight."—Hinds' *History of the Rise and Progress of Christianity*, vol. ii. part iii. ch. ii. p. 120.

view to speculative knowledge, but that too little is revealed. Now with a false revelation, the case is exactly reversed; for that will always abound with copious and distinct, though unprofitable, descriptions of whatever is marvellous, and calculated to strike the imagination, and to amuse an inquisitive mind.

§ 5 Keeping in mind the considerations which have been here offered, we shall find on examination of the Scriptures, that it is a characteristic of the revelation they contain, to withhold such knowledge as is merely speculative—to leave abstract curiosity unsatisfied—and to inform us of little or nothing except what it concerns us for some practical purpose to know.

Nothing could have been more interesting to man's curiosity, than a full account of a future state; and accordingly the Koran abounds with the most copious and high-wrought descriptions of paradise and hell, and of the details of the day of judgment. The writers of our Scriptures, on the contrary, while they are perpetually enforcing with all earnestness the reality of this future state, so important in practice, strictly confine themselves to the most general and brief description of it.

Again, the principles on which different classes of mankind will be judged, and the future fate of those who never heard of revelation, are a highly interesting subject of inquiry, but one from which Scripture carefully abstains, except so far as is needful for us to know: "Strive to enter in at the strait gate," is our Lord's answer to those who inquired as to the number of the saved; and He scarcely adverts at all to the case of the unenlightened, except to inculcate the heavier responsibility of those who sin against revealed knowledge, above those who offended merely against the light of natural reason: "The servant who knew his Lord's will, and did it not, shall be beaten with many stripes." All this, as might be expected, is exactly reversed in the Koran,

which describes at large the final condemnation of all mankind except Mahometans; and of these, such as are punished for their sins, so far from being judged more guilty, as having sinned against better knowledge, are described as finally to be restored, by their belief in the prophet, and received into paradise. Such certainly is the revelation, and such the doctrine, which a false teacher would naturally deliver.

There are, however, some things, I am well aware, revealed in the Gospel, which but too many, even of those who assent to them, are inclined to consider as mere speculative articles of faith; as, for example, the revelation of God to us, not merely as our Creator and Governor, but also as our incarnate Redeemer, and as the Holy Ghost our Sanctifier. But we may safely affirm, that whoever does not perceive in these doctrines any practical tendency, (including in that expression, as we certainly ought, whatever has a reference to the affections and motives, as well as to mere external conduct,) has not yet gained a just and adequate notion of what the Christian religion is.

Fully to refute such an error would be to give a complete explanation of the whole system of the Gospel: let it suffice, therefore, to make an *appeal* to Scripture, and to refer thither both the infidel and the believer, who deny the practical tendency of any of its doctrines, that they may understand what the Gospel really is: the one, before he too hastily rejects it, and the other, before he too hastily builds his hopes on it. A careful and candid perusal of the Bible will sufficiently evince, that, at least, the sacred writers themselves were very far from conceiving that the doctrines they delivered were mere speculative matters of faith, unconnected with any change in the heart and conduct. If they inform us, that "the grace of God, which bringeth salvation, hath appeared unto men," it is "to teach us, that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world;" when they

describe to us "God manifest in the flesh," they instruct us to look to Him with devout trust, and to shape our lives after the model of his perfection; "Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus:" when they "preach Christ crucified," it is that we, while we "crucify the old man with the affections and lusts," may yet with grateful humility renounce all arrogant confidence in our own merits, and look for salvation to his sacrifice,—his intercession,—his spiritual aid: and that while we trust in the divine mercy for the pardon of sin, we may not attribute this pardon, purchased by such a sacrifice, to his lightly regarding sin, but may be sensible of its deadly nature, and its odiousness in God's sight: when they announce his resurrection, it is that we may be exhorted to rise also from the death of sin to a life of holiness, that, "being risen with Christ, we may set our affection on things above;" and may be encouraged to look forward to a final victory over the grave: and when the love of God towards us is set forth, it is given as a reason why "we ought also to love one another," and to testify our sense of his goodness by keeping his commandments.<sup>1</sup>

In short, as the doctrine of the Trinity may be considered as containing a summary and compendium of the Christian Faith, so, its application may be regarded as a summary of Christian practice; which may be said to be comprised in this: that as we believe God to stand in three relations *to us*, we also must practically keep in view the three *corresponding relations* in which, as is plainly implied by that doctrine, we stand *towards Him*; as, first, the creatures and "children of God;" secondly, as the "redeemed and purchased people" of Jesus Christ; and thirdly, as "the temple of the Holy Ghost"<sup>2</sup> our Sanctifier.

<sup>1</sup> See note (I) at the end of this Essay.

<sup>2</sup> It is remarkable that Christians are seldom, if ever, spoken of indi-

vidually as the "temples," but collectively as "the temple" of the Holy Ghost. The Apostles, in a great number of passages, seem to take



§ 6 On such topics, and with such views, the sacred writers dwell with the utmost copiousness, distinctness, and earnestness; but as to the mere increase of speculative knowledge, they are scanty, indistinct, and apparently indifferent. Take, as one instance out of many, the allusion which Paul makes in the twelfth chapter of his second Epistle to the Corinthians, to the celestial vision, with which he had been favoured: nothing is said of it in any other part of his writings; nor does it appear whether he had even mentioned it till then, though it had occurred fourteen years before: he mentions it *then* for a practical purpose, *viz.* to impress the Corinthians (who knew that his own report of a *fact* was to be credited) with a due sense of his apostolic dignity and authority, which they had been disposed to depreciate: and he speaks with the utmost possible brevity of his being “caught up into paradise,” and “hearing unspeakable words,” without relating any particulars of the vision. It is truly edifying to compare this with Mahomet’s long and circumstantial description of his pretended visit to heaven, filled with a multitude of needless particulars, calculated to gratify an appetite for the marvellous. That man must be a bad judge of the characters of truth and falsehood, who can peruse the two accounts without coming to the conclusion, that the one bears the marks of reality, as plainly as the other does of fiction; and that the narrative of Paul, as well as his general tone, is as suitable to a true apostle, as that of Mahomet is to an impostor.

There is another example, which deserves selection, as a very striking one, of the uncircumstantial and practical cha-

---

pains to preserve this distinction; speaking of individual Christians as “living stones builded up (or edified) into an holy temple.” One single text (1 Cor. vi. 19) has been appealed to as conveying the other sense; and that one, even considered by itself, would

much more naturally bear the same interpretation as the rest. See 1 Cor. iii. 16; 2 Cor. vi. 16; Ephes. ii. 22, &c. See also Hinds’ *Three Temples of the One God*; and likewise Eden’s *Theological Dictionary*—Articles, “Temple” and “Trinity.”

acter of the Christian revelations. The Apostle Peter, in his second Epistle, adverts to the deluge, and also to the final destruction of the earth: we may be sure his readers would have been much interested by a circumstantial description of both those events; and we may be nearly as sure, that had he been a false pretender to inspiration, he would have gratified their curiosity: as it is, however, he despatches the subject in five or six verses, and in such terms as convey little or nothing more than the *certainly* of the event; and then proceeds at once to a practical conclusion: "Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness?"

Paul also, in speaking of the same subject, having told the Corinthians, that at the last day "we shall all be changed," and that the blest shall be "clothed upon" with a body "like unto the glorious body of Christ," proceeds, instead of detailing any of the circumstances of so interesting a change, or fully describing the glorified bodies of "saints made perfect," to exhort them to "be steadfast and abounding in the work of the Lord, since they know that their labour is not in vain."

Such passages in the works of these apostles may furnish the most unlearned Christian with "a reason for the hope that is in him," consolatory to his own mind, and unanswerable by infidels. He may ask them, how it came to pass, that no one of our sacred writers has given a full, minute, and engaging account of all that is (according to him) to take place at the end of the world; of all the interesting particulars of the day of Judgment;—of the new bodies with which men will arise; and of "the glories that shall be revealed" in heaven; or has given any account at all, (or at least, any from which a decisive conclusion can be drawn) of the condition in which men are to remain during the interval between death and the resurrection. It is plain, that nothing could have been more *gratifying* to the curiosity of all who had an

interest in the subject; nothing more likely even to *allure* fresh converts, than a glowing description of the joys of heaven: it would have been easily *believed* too, by those who gave credit to the writer, as it is plain Paul supposed the Corinthians did:—it would have been very *easy*, again, for an *impostor* to give a loose to his fancy, in inventing such a description; and to an *enthusiast* it would have been unavoidable: he who was passing off his day-dreams for revelations, on himself as well as on others, would have been sure to dream largely on such a subject. Why then did not Paul do any thing of the kind? I answer, because he was *not* an impostor, nor an enthusiast, but taught only what had been actually revealed to him, and what he was commissioned to reveal to others. Let infidels give any other answer to the question if they can. They have had near two thousand years to try; and never yet have they been able to explain the dry, brief, uncircumstantial, unadorned, unpretending accounts which our sacred writers give, of things the most interesting to human curiosity, on any other supposition than that of their being honest and sober-minded men, who spoke only what they knew to be the truth.

§ 7 If there be any weight in that train of argument which has been now sketched out with a view of recommending it to general consideration, rather than fully developed, it follows, that those who confound together all religions with indiscriminate contempt, by speaking of them as all alike making pretensions to some divine revelation, are guilty of suppressing a most remarkable and essential distinction as to the character of those professed revelations. For if there be good ground for maintaining, first, that a *false* religion may be expected to contain in its pretended revelations superfluous matters, which concern only speculative curiosity; secondly, that *all religions, except our own*, do actually abound in such matters; thirdly, that a *true* revelation may be expected to *abstain* from every thing of the kind, and to contain

only such things as are practically important, or, at least, nothing to gratify men's curiosity ; and, lastly, that *our* Scriptures actually do conform to this rule ; it will be difficult to avoid the conclusion, that they, and they only, do really come from God.

Let this then not be omitted in the list of those many distinct proofs which combine to establish our faith ; each one of which, besides its intrinsic force, augments (since they all tend to one common point) the strength of all the rest. No one, who judges correctly, and feels rightly, on the subject, will ever regard with indifference any valid argument, on the ground that he is already sufficiently convinced : for besides that he cannot tell what occasion he may hereafter find, on account of others, if not on his own, for any and every various kind of argument that can be adduced, (since different minds are influenced by different modes of proof,) it is, moreover, to a well-constituted mind, both profitable and delightful, to dwell on the contemplation of that vast mass of evidence which the Almighty has in this case provided ; and so provided, that it shall not at once strike with its full force the most careless observer, but develop itself more and more, the further and the more diligently we pursue our inquiries in various directions.

In addition to the *evidence* for our religion which the view we have here taken may afford, there are some other not less important results to which it leads, as to the right use and right interpretation of Scripture ; which it will be worth while briefly to hint at.

§ 8 Let it be considered, then, first, what we ought to expect to learn from revelation ; secondly, how we should understand what *is* revealed ; and, lastly, what application we should make of it.

1. With respect to the first point, it is evident, from what has been said, that we must not expect to learn any thing

from revelation, except what is in a *religious* point of view practically important for us to know.

Of other inquiries, there are some, (such as those respecting the Laws of Nature,) which it is safe and laudable to pursue by those other means which are within our reach; by the light of reason, aided by observation and experiment. Only, let no one seek for a system of Astronomy, or of Geology, or of any other branch of Physical Science, in the Scriptures; which were designed to teach men, not Natural Philosophy, but Religion: nor let them be forced into the service of any particular theory on those subjects; nor, again complained of, for not furnishing sufficient information on such points. Nor let any jealous fears be cherished, lest the pursuits of science should interfere with revelation.<sup>1</sup> We may be confident, that a judicious and honest search after truth, conducted without any unfair prejudice, or insidious design, can never ultimately lead to any conclusion that is really irreconcilable with a true revelation: but so totally distinct are the objects respectively proposed, that innumerable varieties of opinion as to scientific subjects may, and in fact do, exist, among men who are all sincerely agreed in acknowledging the authority of Scripture.

There are other points again which are *not* within the reach of our natural faculties, but which, not being needful for us to know, and consequently not declared in revelation, are to be regarded as those "secret things which belong unto the Lord our God." As to such points, therefore, we should not only seek for no explanation in Scripture, but should carefully abstain from the presumption of all inquiry whatever. Many indeed of these inscrutable mysteries may perhaps no longer be such, in a future and higher state of existence; even though the same rule should still be observed, of not *miraculously revealing* any thing for the mere gratification of curiosity. For, not only is it probable that our facul-

---

<sup>1</sup> See Essay I. Second Series, § 5.

ties may be so far enlarged, as to enable us to understand and discover *for ourselves*, without direct revelation, things which at present surpass our powers; but also, it may be, that, in a different state of existence, many things may *become* of practical importance to us, which are not so now; and may thus become fit subjects of *revelation*. But in this present life we should carefully guard against the too prevailing error of presumptuous inquiries, and attempts to explain unrevealed mysteries; an error which generally leaves men the more bewildered and mistaken, the greater their ingenuity and diligence.

Little as there is revealed to us of the condition of our first parents in Paradise, thus much (and let Christians never forget it) is plainly taught us, that they fell from their happy state through the desire of *forbidden knowledge*. It was by seeking from *men* to become “as *gods*, knowing good and evil,” that they incurred that loss, to retrieve which God was made Man, in Christ Jesus; who “took upon Him the form of a servant, and *humbled* Himself unto Death, even the death of the cross,” to redeem us, the children of Adam, whom *want* of humility had ruined, and to open to us the gates of eternal life, which presumptuous transgression had shut. How then can we hope to enter in, if we repeat the very transgression of Adam, in seeking to be wise above that which is written? By inquisitive pride was immortal happiness forfeited; and the path by which we must travel back to its recovery is that of patient and resigned humility.

2. With respect to the right understanding of what is revealed, it is evident if the view we have taken be correct, that the most *practical* interpretation of each doctrine that can fairly be adopted is ever likely to be the *truest*. Let it be laid down, therefore, as an important general rule, (of which numerous applications may be found by any one who will seek for them,) that if the other reasons be equal, or nearly equal in favour of two different interpretations of any part of Scripture, one of which represents it as

conveying a mere speculative point of faith, and the other, as having some tendency to influence the heart or the conduct, this latter is to be adopted, as the more conformable to the general plan of revelation.<sup>1</sup>

3. Moreover, if our religion be indeed of this practical character—if every thing revealed in it be intended to have an influence on our motives and actions—it behoves the Christian to be careful never to “put asunder what God has joined together;” but to make, and exhort others to make, a practical application of its doctrines to character and conduct. I mean not merely that a virtuous life, as well as a right faith, is necessary; for though this is very true, it would have been no less true, if faith and practice had been *two totally distinct things*, both required of us;—if doctrines purely speculative had been proposed for our belief, and precepts unconnected with them subjoined. But as the case actually stands, it is not enough to state that the faith must be right, and the conduct right also; the conduct must spring from the faith; and not from some part of it only, but from all: the doctrines of our religion, not some of them, but all, must exert their influence on the moral character. That which was justly remarked by the Jewish historian, Josephus, of his own nation, may be applied with still more propriety to Christians, who are placed under the latter and more complete form of the same general system: “While all other people,” says he, “reckon religion a *part of virtue*, the Jews alone account virtue a *part of religion*.”

I speak not now of the errors of those who *reject* either religious faith or moral duty; but of those who regard them too much as *distinct*. There have, indeed, been many in all ages, from the ancient Peripatetic, down to the modern Deist, who have aimed at virtue without religion; and there

<sup>1</sup> It is on this ground, among others, that I have argued against the reception, as a part of *revealed* religion, of the Calvinistic doctrine of Election and

Reprobation; which, as explained by the most approved divines of that school, is a purely *speculative* tenet. Essay III. Second Series, § 5.

have been many more, from the Pagan with his hecatombs and purifications, down to the Antinomian of the present day, who have aimed at religion without virtue. But there are also some, it is to be feared, who, though they acknowledge the necessity of both, are not sufficiently careful to keep in mind, and to exhibit, their close and intimate *connection*; but (to use the illustration of the Apostle James) separate from each other, as it were, the soul and the body, and yet think to preserve both. Else, we should not find so strong a distinction frequently drawn between *doctrinal* and *practical discourses*; as if the two subjects were, neither of them indeed to be neglected, but kept apart and independent. Whereas, in truth, every doctrinal discourse should lead the Christian hearer to its proper moral results—every practical precept be referred in his mind to its true foundation in the Gospel doctrines. It is not enough that the inward works of a clock are well constructed, and also the dial-plate and hands; the one must act on the other; the works must regulate the movements of the hands.

Such being, then, the practical character of Christianity, let it be observed, in the last place, that all to whom the doctrines of Revelation have been taught, and those more especially whose attention has been more peculiarly directed to them by a course of theological studies, if they are not the better for their religious knowledge, will assuredly be the worse for it. It is not merely that, having failed to derive due advantage from the light of the Gospel, they will be heavily accountable for the neglect of so great a blessing; but, moreover, by long familiarity with the doctrines of religion, while they neglect its duties, they will acquire a habit of insensibility to all moral impressions from that quarter: and by thus becoming hardened against the influence of the strongest of all motives, they will have shut the door against all hopes of reformation. For as those who have been long accustomed, for example, to encounter dangers, or to witness sufferings, without giving way to the



corresponding emotions of fear or pity, are far more callous to such emotions, than those who have not been conversant with scenes of that kind; so, those who have been long familiarised to the thoughts of religion, without applying it to their lives, are far more incurably hardened, than if they had never heard or thought any thing on the subject.<sup>1</sup>

Let the Christian, then, never lose sight of that every-way awful responsibility under which the Gospel-revelation places him. Abstaining from all unprofitable and presumptuous inquiries as to religious subjects, let him earnestly seek such knowledge as “is able to make us wise unto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus;” and while in his *studies* he keeps in mind that we “now know but in part,” and see “through a glass, darkly,” let his *life* illustrate his conviction, that “the things which are revealed belong unto us, that we may *do* all the words of this Law.”

The character of the revelation bestowed on us, in respect of the point which has just been considered, has a reference and a close correspondence, to another peculiarity of our Religion—the proposal of the example of *children* by our sacred writers, with a view both to the explanation, and to the practical application, of what they teach. This peculiarity, by no means the least admirable in the Gospel-scheme, yet one which is in general very slightly noticed, will form the subject of the next Essay.

---

<sup>1</sup> “Going over the theory of virtue, in one’s thoughts—talking well—and drawing fine pictures of it—this is so far from necessarily or certainly conducing to form a habit of it in him who thus employs himself, that it may harden the mind in a contrary course,

and form a habit of insensibility to all moral obligation. For from our very faculty of habits, passive impressions, by being repeated, grow weaker, and thoughts, by often passing through the mind, are felt less sensibly.” Bishop Butler’s *Analogy*.

---

## NOTE TO ESSAY IV.

---

### NOTE I, page 156.

I HAVE known a very intelligent man, and well-read in Scripture, object to (after having at first admitted it) this view of the exclusively relative and practical character of Revelation, from not liking some consequences to which it leads. He accordingly set himself to find in Scripture some purely speculative revelation respecting the Deity; and the passage he fixed on was in Psalm cxlvii. 5, where it is said that the Lord's "understanding is infinite." Now we have no ground, as he ingeniously remarked, for concluding that *infinite* wisdom (only, very great wisdom) is necessary for the government of the world; or, consequently, that the revelation of this infinity is needful for a *practical* purpose: and here therefore is an instance of something revealed concerning God, which is not of a relative and practical character.

Now let it be remembered, in the first place, that it evidently is practically needful to impress strongly on men's minds a full conviction that God's wisdom is amply *sufficient* for all that concerns us; that in all his dispensations to man, whether natural or supernatural, nothing can have escaped his notice,—no means can have been ill adapted to their ends: and in the second place, that if the divine wisdom *be*, in fact, infinite, it would not have been allowable to say that it is *not* so. Ought then the sacred writer, after having expatiated fully on the greatness and on the complete *sufficiency*, as far as regards Man, of the divine wisdom, to have added that whether this wisdom is absolutely infinite or not, he is not commissioned to reveal? Surely it would have savoured of cumbrous and frivolous minuteness, thus to have gone *out of his way*, to *conceal* what there was no reason for concealing. The object, and a most important practical object, was to assure men of the sufficiency of the divine wisdom; and much the shortest, simplest, and most effectual way of doing *this*, in the passage in question, was, by declaring its infinity.

And yet it is very remarkable, that numerous as are the occasions on which the sacred writers set forth the greatness and admirable perfection of God's wisdom, in reference to us, no other passage I believe can be found in which its *infinity* is distinctly asserted,

except this *one*; which occurs in a Hymn of praise, whose distinct object is to magnify the Supreme Being in our eyes, and to raise in us the highest veneration possible ("for we can never go far enough") of every thing that is glorious in Him. So that in respect of this purpose, the declaration, after all, *has* a practical object.

I have mentioned this instance, to show how difficult (not to say impossible) it is, for the utmost ingenuity and diligence combined, to find any one passage of Scripture even seemingly at variance with the principle I have been maintaining.

---

## ESSAY V.

---

### ON THE EXAMPLE OF CHILDREN AS PROPOSED TO CHRISTIANS.

---

THE allusion to the state of childhood, as illustrative of the condition and of the duties of Christians, occurs repeatedly in the sacred writings, and is dwelt on with an earnestness which may be regarded as one of the characteristic marks of the Gospel system of instruction.

Accordingly, many of our divines have occasionally alluded to the subject, and suggested it from time to time to the attention of their readers. But the idea is not perhaps in general sufficiently expanded and dwelt on in detail, to engage Christians to make it an habitual study, and resort continually for instruction to the example which is thus held out to them. And yet unless this be done—unless we dwell very fully and frequently on the case of children with a view to the better understanding of our own condition, and our own duties—we lose what is in fact one principal advantage of the example proposed to us, viz. its *commonness*. Instead of selecting examples of rare and extraordinary virtue, or seeking to contemplate human nature under any peculiar and uncommon circumstances, we have only to look back to what we were ourselves when children, and to look around us to observe what children are. Neither learning nor genius is required for the study; and though the ablest man may derive from it such instruction as nothing else can supply, the plainest Christian may do the same, if he be but a sincere and candid and attentive inquirer.

The analogy now under consideration may be regarded

as twofold: first, as children are in regard to their parents, so, in some respects, are we in relation to God: and, secondly, as children are in comparison of what they will be hereafter, so, in some respects, is the Christian in this present life, compared with what he hopes to be in the world to come. I say, in some respects, because it is not to be expected that whatever analogy may be presented to us should hold good throughout; and it is an important rule, never to press a comparison too far, nor to suppose that things which correspond in some points, must therefore correspond in all. Thus, in the present instance, there is this important point of distinction between the two cases, that while children may expect to become hereafter what their parents are now, we, on the contrary, though in a certain sense the children of God, must always, even in the most exalted and glorified state to which we can attain in the next world, remain at an immeasurable distance from our Creator.

Yet notwithstanding this, our case is sufficiently analogous to that of children, to furnish us with most valuable instruction, if we will but duly attend to the correspondence that does exist.

On many mysterious subjects, though man is unable to attain complete knowledge, he will thus, at least, be brought to understand the true nature and full extent of his own ignorance; and many of his duties will be most clearly pointed out, and forcibly inculcated, by the example of children.

§ 2 The subject is ~~this~~ naturally divided into two branches; first, our analogy to children in respect of the *knowledge* we possess; and, secondly, in respect of *duties*—of the rules of conduct we may derive from contemplating the condition of childhood. On each of these points it is proposed not so much to offer instruction to the reader, as to lead him to instruct himself; not so much to enter into copious details, explaining what should be the Christian's judgment and what

his conduct, in each case, as to suggest matter for his own private meditation and habitual observation. For the very object contemplated in holding out the example of children, is, that men, by being referred to that example, may frame for themselves precepts more abundant and minute, and more exactly adapted to each particular case, than any that could be delivered to them by another.

I. In treating of the analogy of our situation to that of children in respect of knowledge, the circumstances to be noticed as most worthy of attention in the notions which they form, are these three; first, that their knowledge is, in *kind*, *relative*; *i. e.* that they know little more of any thing than the relation in which it stands to themselves: secondly, that in *degree*, it is a *scanty and imperfect* knowledge; and, thirdly, that it is nevertheless *practically* sufficient for them, if they are but careful to make a good use of it.

1. First then, with respect to the *kind* of knowledge which children possess: a few moments' consideration may convince us, that it is, as has been said, almost exclusively relative; *i. e.* that they know the nature of scarcely any thing, as it is *in itself*, but as it is *relatively* to *them*. A child soon becomes acquainted in some degree with its parents and other kindred—its nurses, teachers, and other friends; but as to the nature of this knowledge, is it not manifest that it is merely relative? He knows little or nothing of what these persons really are, except so far as he himself is concerned with them; he perceives in some measure what they are *to him*; but beyond this, he is nearly in the dark: the very words “parent,” “kinsman,” “friend,” &c. are, all of them, *relative* terms; and the notions belonging to these, and such as these, are the very earliest a child can form—these are the very first terms he is able in any degree to understand and apply.

Suppose the child's father to be some mighty sovereign, or an eminent statesman, poet, philosopher, or warrior—one whose life perhaps is of importance to millions, or whose fame spreads over half the globe; of all this the child him-

self has but a very faint, if any, conception; this Being, so great in station, or so remarkable in character, he regards merely as *his father*; this is but a *relation*; and is but one out of the many relations in which the same person stands to those around him. It is, however, the circumstance which is of the most consequence to the child himself; and it is, therefore, for a considerable time at least, the only one that he ever thinks about, or is at all capable of comprehending. As he grows older, fresh and fresh light is continually breaking in upon him, and he is continually gaining increased knowledge respecting the persons and the things that are around him: but still the main part of that knowledge, and all the earlier part of it, is relative, and relative to himself.

Now we account it a mark of silly presumption in a child to pretend to understand fully, and pronounce upon positively, the nature of any thing as it is in itself; or to suppose that every thing is of greater or less importance in proportion as it affects himself. A child is indeed extremely apt to fall into this error; but we never fail to check it, and to endeavour to repress such a disposition, by explaining to him, as well as we can, how partial his knowledge is, even respecting those things of which he is not utterly ignorant, and how many there are which he cannot at present understand at all. We teach him, and strive to impress on his mind, that his friends have many other concerns to attend to besides what relates to him,—that he is not to measure the magnitude, or judge of the nature, of every thing, merely with reference to himself,—and that even of those things which do principally concern him, and which are done for his sake, his knowledge and powers are so limited, that he must not reckon himself a competent judge of the fitness or unfitness of the measures that are taken. And we expect that a docile and well-disposed child will carefully listen to these admonitions, and will be so far sensible of his own weakness, as to perceive the propriety of complying with them.

Now Christians are surely called on to apply all this to themselves: especially when it is considered, that children approach incomparably nearer to an equality with their parents, than the creature can to the Creator; and that their knowledge of the character and transactions of grown persons is infinitely fuller and more perfect than we can have of the nature and dealings of God. Our knowledge of Him, like that of children, is almost entirely relative. The sacred writings, which hold out to us the condition of childhood as an illustration and as a pattern, these very Scriptures, with admirable consistency, reveal God to us, not as He is in Himself, but, chiefly, as he is in relation to ourselves. They tell us, that He is our Creator, Preserver, and Governor; that "in Him we live, and move, and have our being;" that "He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek Him," and a Judge that will punish those that disobey Him; that He took our nature upon Him in Christ Jesus to effect our salvation; and that He dwells in, and sanctifies, the hearts of his faithful servants. Now all this, and much more such knowledge, which the Scriptures supply to us respecting God, is evidently relative to ourselves. The very words, "Creator," "Governor," "Judge," "Redeemer," "Sanctifier," are altogether relative terms. And understanding imperfectly and indistinctly as we do, this, which is revealed, we may well expect to be utterly lost and bewildered when we attempt (going beyond revelation) to comprehend, by our own unaided powers, what God really is.

How, indeed, can our finite minds embrace infinity? The very words Omnipresence, and Eternity, overpower our faculties, the more, in proportion as they are dwelt upon; and yet we cannot conceive that God should *not* be present in every part of the universe which He created and maintains in its established order; wherever we go, we find traces of His agency; yet we cannot either suppose Him to exist in any such relation to Space, that we and every thing around us has; nor, again, conceive what that Being can be, who



thus pervades all Space, and occupies none. "In truth, *omnipresent* is a relative term. And, moreover, God is said to be omnipresent because all things are *present to Him*; not because He is *present to all things*. There is an error in assigning Him *any place at all*;—in attributing *locality* to a Being who cannot be affected, as we are, by *the distinctions of space*. The same may be observed of eternity, as applied to the Divine nature. We can only judge of time by a *succession of impressions on the mind*; and it is usually by supposing an infinite succession that we arrive at our notion of eternity. But why should we presume to say, that any such *succession* is requisite for the Divine mind? A savage would instruct a traveller in his route, by a *successive* enumeration of point after point, and line after line, in his course; a civilized man would do the same *at once*, by placing a map before him. If then human nature exerts itself so differently, as it is cultivated or neglected, how cautious should we be in framing analogies between the energies and capacities of the most perfect mind, and of God who formed it."<sup>1</sup>

We cannot, indeed, understand what it is to exist without any relation to Time; yet we cannot but conclude, both from reason and revelation, that with Him, the great I AM, there can be no distinction of Past, Present, and Future, but that all things must be eternally present; since all our notions of time may be clearly traced up to the *succession* of ideas or impressions on our own minds; which succession cannot be supposed to take place with an omniscient Being. So that the couplet of the poet Cowley, which has been, by some, laughed to scorn as absurd, will be found, if we duly consider it, to be the most appropriate expression possible of such imperfect and indistinct notions as alone we can entertain on such a subject:

" Nothing there is to come, and nothing past,  
But an eternal *now* does ever last."

---

<sup>1</sup> Hinds' *History of the Rise and Progress of Christianity*, vol. i. ch. v. note to p. 296.

Unfortunately, however, when men have affixed *names* to these indistinct and imperfect notions of theirs, and when, by long and frequent use, they have grown familiar with these names, they are thence apt to forget, how little they know of the *things* themselves. It is indeed a convenience to employ such names, provided we do not suffer ourselves to fancy that the familiar use of them makes the things spoken of become intelligible. It is an advantage in algebraical calculations to employ a letter of the alphabet as a symbol to denote some unknown quantity; only let it not be supposed, that by this means it becomes at once a *known* quantity.

Moreover, besides the imperfect and indistinct knowledge which we have of those divine attributes whose existence we believe in, there may be others also, for aught we know, of which we have never had any suspicion, and which we should be as incapable of understanding with our present faculties, as a blind man is of forming any idea of colours. Is it not then something even worse than childish, to reason upon and discuss boldly, and pronounce upon dogmatically, the attributes and the acts of God? as if we had means of ascertaining the real nature of that stupendous Being, instead of knowing merely, in some degree, what He is with respect to ourselves.

It is true, that every one is ready to admit, in general terms, that the nature of God is not comprehensible by the human faculties; but how few are there that duly follow up this maxim in practice! how few writers, that, after having distinctly made the admission, do not, even within a few pages, slide imperceptibly into such a presumptuous style of assertion and of reasoning, as shows them to have completely forgotten that our knowledge of the Almighty is relative!

How great must be the errors arising from men's overlooking, or not carefully attending to, this circumstance, it is hardly necessary to point out. The rustic, who persists in

maintaining that the sun itself actually moves, because he sees it rise and set, *i. e.* sees that it is in different *positions relatively to himself*; and the child, who, while he is sailing in a ship, fancies that the land flies from him, or advances towards him; are not more completely mistaken in their notions, than those theologians who reason upon the accounts which the Scriptures give us of the Deity, as if these were intended to explain to us what He is, absolutely, in Himself, and not, merely what He is in relation to ourselves.

And the liability to error is greatly increased by this circumstance; that even the relations in which God stands to his creatures are so imperfectly comprehensible by our understandings, that it is necessary to explain them by analogical language, and by the use of such types and comparisons, as may furnish to our minds a kind of picture or image of heavenly things, whose correspondence with the original cannot of course be in all points complete; any more than a picture can,<sup>1</sup> in all respects, resemble the solid body which it is designed to imitate. If therefore we extend this analogy further than was intended, and conclude, that the things which are represented as corresponding in some points must needs correspond throughout,—or if, again, we conclude, that the things must be *alike*, because they are analogous, and bear similar relations to something else,<sup>2</sup>—we shall fall into the grossest absurdities; such as we often see in children, when they interpret literally the analogical explanations which are given them.

If any one will be at the pains to collect instances for himself, from recollection of his own infancy, and from what he has observed in other children, of the mistakes which are in this way continually committed by every child, and will

---

<sup>1</sup> See Archbishop King's *Sermon on Predestination*, already referred to. See also note (K) at the end of this Essay.

<sup>2</sup> See Bishop Copleston's remarks on analogy, in the notes to his *Discourses on Predestination*, p. 122.

carefully reflect on these, not as a mere source of amusement, but with a view to his own instruction, they will serve as a mirror to shew what sort of mistakes he himself also has to guard against, in the notions he forms respecting the Almighty.

To take one out of innumerable instances; how many there are who speak and reason concerning the *glory* of God (that being a phrase which occurs in Scripture,) as if they supposed, that the desire of glory did literally influence the divine mind, and as if God could really covet the admiration of his creatures: not considering, that the only intention of this expression is to signify merely, that God's works are contrived in the same admirable manner as if He *had* had this object in view: and that we are bound to pay Him the same reverent homage, and zealous obedience, as if He were really and literally capable of being glorified by us. And yet it is chiefly from a literal interpretation of this phrase of "the glory of God," that some Calvinistic divines have undertaken to explain the whole system of divine Providence, and to establish some very revolting and somewhat dangerous conclusions.

§ 3 The considerations which have just been adduced, lead naturally to a second point that is worthy of notice in the condition of children: not only is their knowledge almost entirely *relative*, but even of things relating to themselves they have a very *limited* knowledge; and what they do know, they know but imperfectly, partially, and indistinctly. It has been remarked above, that of their parents and kindred, and other friends, they know little or nothing except the relation in which these stand to themselves; but it is observable also, that this very relation they are far from adequately comprehending, so as to understand wherein it consists: and in this and every other part of their knowledge, those will usually appear to them the most *essential* circumstances, which, in fact, are *accidental*, or subordinate; so that even

where they are *not mistaken*, their knowledge is still very scanty and imperfect. For example, they will often learn accurately to distinguish from one another persons of different professions, by the colour of their clothes, or by some such external mark ; which they are apt to regard as the real and essential characteristic of each, respectively. But as their faculties and knowledge improve, they come to perceive gradually, that what they had before considered as the most important circumstances, are subordinate, and comparatively trifling ; and that their former notions, though not altogether erroneous, were extremely defective, from their not being aware of, or perhaps even able to comprehend, those points which are in reality the most essential.

“It must strike every one who will please to review the ideas and imaginations of his youth, what was then his notion of many things which he now looks at, and has long looked at, as so many vain and foolish baubles—how eager he was in the pursuit of them, how impatient of being disappointed. He is at a loss now to conceive where, or in what, the value or pleasure of them could consist, so much to engage his affections, to agitate his passions, to give him such anxiety in the pursuit, and pain in the loss. Now something very like this will probably take place in the judgment we shall hereafter form of many of the articles which at present compose the objects of our care and solicitude. When we come, in the new state of our existence, to look upon riches, and honours, and fortune, and pre-eminence, and prosperity—how like the play and pursuits of children, their little strifes, and contests, and disturbances, will these things appear ! When the curtain is drawn aside, and the great scene of our future existence let in upon our view, how shall we regard the most serious of our present engagements and successes, as the toys and trifles of our childhood, the sport and pastime of this infancy of our existence !”<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Paley's *Sermons*.

Many persons are struck with the air of *puerility* which appears in a great part of the precepts of the Mosaic law, and which has even proved, to some, a stumbling-block, from its supposed unsuitableness to the dignity of a Divine Law-giver. In a future and higher state of existence, we may probably perceive nearly the same, in all the instructions, natural, or supernatural, ever given to man in his highest state of civilization: and the difference between the rudest and the most advanced conditions of our Species (when once removed from the condition of mere savages), may then appear to us hardly worth notice. The distinction between the ancient Israelites and the most enlightened Christians, may perhaps hereafter appear to us analogous to that (so strongly felt at the time, and so little, in mature life) between children of four or five years old, and those of eight or nine.

For let Christians but remember, that in this respect we are still children, in comparison of what Christ's faithful servants may hope to become in a future state; and that this process of not only rectifying errors, but clearing, and extending, and perfecting knowledge, is far from being yet completed, nor ever will be, in our present state. "When I was a child," says the Apostle Paul, "I spake as a child, I thought as a child, I understood as a child; but when I became a man, I put away childish things." "We now," he adds, "see by means of a mirror, darkly;<sup>1</sup> but then face to face: now, I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known." When then, on the one hand, presumptuous objections are brought against the received accounts, of the fall of man, for instance—of the redemption by Christ—of a future judgment—and every part of the divine dispensations; and when, on the other hand, no less presumptuous explanations are offered of the same: let him,

---

<sup>1</sup> This is evidently the true sense of the original, and probably what our translators meant to convey; but their version of it is, to say the least, ambiguous.

who would derive wisdom from the source which God has pointed out, instead of listening either to such objections, or to such answers, occupy himself in reflecting on the absurd mistakes which children commit, when they imagine themselves to have a full and correct notion of any thing that has been partially explained to them, and suffer themselves to fancy (as soon as any glimmering knowledge has been afforded them) that they understand completely the transactions and situations of grown persons.

And if any one would attain the best idea he is capable of forming on that most important point of wisdom, the nature and extent of his own ignorance, let him seek it by analogy, and have recourse to a child for his instructor. Let him endeavour to convey to a very young child as full and correct a notion as possible, of civil-government, and legal institutions—of commercial transactions, and various arts and sciences—of the past history and present condition of various nations; and let him carefully observe how utterly unintelligible many points will remain to the infant mind, after all the explanations that can be given;—how *uninteresting* many subjects will prove, which hereafter will be regarded as the most important; how imperfect and inadequate will be the notions that are formed on others, and what strange mistakes will be continually arising; especially if the child, through conceit and presumption, is not aware of his own incompetency to judge, and does not perceive that he is out of his depth. And then let the instructor apply the lesson to himself: let him learn from the example of the child, what is likely to be the imperfection of his own knowledge and of his own faculties; and let him no longer presume that he understands, or can expect to discover, the whole, or even the greater and more essential part, of any one of the divine dispensations, merely on the ground that some part of God's designs has been declared to him; nor flatter himself, that because he is assured of the truth of *something*, therefore there is nothing that is concealed from

him. " We can seldom review what passed in our minds when we were children, without being surprised with the odd and extravagant notions which we took up and entertained—how wildly we accounted for some things, and what strange forms we assigned to many other things—what improbable resemblances we supposed, what unlikely effects were expected, what consequences we feared. I can easily believe, that many of the opinions and notions we now erroneously entertain, especially concerning the place, condition, nature, occupation, and happiness of departed saints, may hereafter appear to us as wild, as odd, as unlikely and ill-founded, as our childish fancies appear to us now. Like the child, we take our ideas from what we see, and transfer them to what we do not see; like him, we look upon and judge of things above our understanding, by comparing them with things which we do understand; and they bear afterwards as little resemblance, as little foundation for comparison, as the most chimerical and fantastic visions of a childish imagination. And this I judge to be what Paul had particularly in his thoughts when he wrote the words of the text: ' Now we know in part; but when that which is perfect is come, then, that which is in part shall be done away;' even as ' when I was a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child; but when I became a man, I put away childish things.' Our apprehensions of futurity may, it is true, be in many respects childish, but still they may be innocent, so long as we are not over anxious, nor over positive, to insist upon others receiving them, and too much inclined to make difficulties, or start at those which we meet with, from an opinion that we are able to guess and find out the whole of such subjects."<sup>1</sup>

A child perceives that the sun gives light and heat to the spot which he inhabits; so far he judges rightly; but he is not unlikely to conclude, that the sun was created for that purpose; he is ignorant of its conferring the same advantages

---

<sup>1</sup> Paley's *Sermons*, last vol. pp. 223, 224.



on distant parts of the world; and he supposes its real magnitude to be nearly the same as it appears to be. By degrees his knowledge is enlarged, and he comes to understand, that the same sun shines upon the whole earth; he now perhaps looks back with contempt on his former ignorance, and imagines that he understands fully the whole use and importance of the sun; whereas he still knows but a very small part of it. In time, if he is in the way of scientific instruction, and is diligent in profiting by it, he will come to learn, that the earth is only one out of many planets—several much larger than our own—that are warmed and enlightened by the same sun, which is a far larger body than all of them together; and we should be very presumptuous were we to conclude, that even this purpose is the only, or even the principal one, for which the sun was created.

Most arrogant then must he be, who dares conclude, that when he knows something of God's attributes and dispensations, he fully understands either the whole, or even the most essential part, of them. We know certain relations in which the Almighty stands towards us; but there may be other relations besides these, of which we know nothing. We are instructed in some degree how far we are interested in the fall of Adam, in the redemption through Christ, and in other of God's dispensations; but we know not that this is all; nor have we any reason for supposing, that even the greater part has been revealed to us. The fall of our first Parents may, for aught we know, have been of consequence to different orders of Beings, whose very existence we are ignorant of; the death of Christ may, in some unknown way, be the means of salvation to millions who never heard of Him; his coming to judge the world may affect other worlds besides our own.

Is this vast extent of ignorance revolting to any one? let him then recollect the time when he was a child, and refresh his memory by the observation of other children. Let him remember how strange many things seemed to him,

which are now perfectly cleared up;—how utterly ignorant he was of matters, which are now familiar to him; how far he was from being able to comprehend the nature, and even from suspecting the existence of many things, which now principally occupy his thoughts;—and, above all, how sure he was to be mistaken, whenever he presumed to fancy that his own notions were adequate, and his knowledge perfect. This habitual study of the infantine mind will prepare us to go any lengths in the confession of our ignorance, and the due distrust of our faculties: we shall thus become learned in human nature, as to that most important part of it, its imperfections; and where full and accurate knowledge is not to be attained, we shall at least keep clear of presumptuous error. Where the darkness cannot be removed, it is a great point to be aware that it is darkness, instead of being deceived and misled by false lights and delusive appearances.

§ 4 It was mentioned as a third point in which the knowledge possessed by children is worthy of consideration, that, scanty and imperfect as it is, it is yet fully sufficient for all practical purposes: a child knows, indeed, but little of the friends that surround him: but he knows enough to understand that they *are* friends, and that he may profit by their instructions, and rely on their protection. Children soon learn to distinguish, in a great degree, what things are agreeable, and what, painful; what profitable, and what, mischievous; and if they are patient and docile, they rapidly improve in this kind of knowledge. They learn also very early, what sort of conduct will gain them the approbation and goodwill of their parents and their playfellows; and what will subject them to displeasure, ridicule, or punishment. Almost all the knowledge, indeed, that is early and easily acquired by children, is of a practical nature. For example, a child, as has been above remarked, understands very little of the real nature of the sun; but he very soon comes to understand its efficacy in enlightening—in warming

—in drying—in altering the colours of several substances—in expanding flowers—in ripening fruits. This sort of knowledge it is, universally, that is the most essential to be early acquired; and it is of such knowledge consequently, that, by the appointment of Providence, children are the most capable. That which they can best learn, as children, is precisely such as is best calculated to lead them on to a more advanced state, and to qualify them for their future conduct in the world as men.

Such, likewise, is our state in this present life; we can attain abundant knowledge for practical purposes; in the midst of all our ignorance and weakness, that which we can *best* understand is our *duty*: and if we are diligent and patient in acquiring such knowledge as is suitable for us, and in practically applying it, instead of boldly prying into mysteries beyond our reach, we shall be undergoing the best preparation for that superior state of existence, in which God's faithful servants will, through his mercy, obtain an enlargement of their faculties, an increase of their knowledge, and a nearer view of his adorable perfections. On the other hand, the evils which are brought upon the *man* by presumptuous disobedience, by carelessness, and by indocility, —in the child, may warn us what those have to expect, who, in what concerns religion, copy the example of such perverseness.

§ 5 II. This reference of knowledge to practice, leads naturally to the consideration of that which was laid down as the second branch of the present inquiry, viz. the advantages to be derived from a comparison between the condition of Christians and that of children, in respect of *conduct*; their example being often held out for *imitation* by Jesus and his followers; whose manner of teaching is, in this respect, hardly less peculiar, than in the others formerly mentioned. In treating of the former branch of the subject before us, the object proposed may be described as being to show how far

men *necessarily* are like children: how far *they ought to be so*—what instruction they may derive in respect of duty, from following the example of children—is our present matter of consideration.

The disciples, we are told in the Gospel, came unto Jesus, saying, “Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven? and Jesus called a little child unto Him, and set him in the midst of them, and said, Verily I say unto you, except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven.” Our Lord’s most immediate object seems to have been, to check the pride of his disciples; we may presume therefore that the point in which He was more especially holding out children to our imitation, is their lowliness of mind, modesty, and self-distrust.

To this must be added, in the second place, their *docility*; *i. e.* a disposition to listen with candour, and singleness of heart, and patience, to the instruction that is imparted to them. It is thus that the Apostle James reasons from the *filial* relation in which we stand to God: “of his own will,” says he, (ch. i. 18—21.) “*begat He us* with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of first fruits of his creatures. Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be *swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath*; (for the wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God.) Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with *meekness* the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls.”

Lastly, another point in which the example of children is most profitable for the imitation of Christians, is that which may be called their *resignation*; *i. e.* an undoubting and affectionate confidence in parental care and kindness; accompanied with a cheerful submission and ready obedience, even where they cannot understand the reasons of the commands given, and of the restrictions imposed.

§ 6 I. First then, with respect to the humility of children: though we do indeed frequently find in them the seeds of arrogance, as well as of every other evil propensity to which our frail and corrupt nature is liable; it will hardly be denied, that, as a general rule, childhood is characterised by modesty, self-distrust, consciousness of weakness, and readiness to acknowledge faults: they are qualities also peculiarly *suitable* to that age; and we are accordingly especially careful to warn children against presumption and self-confidence, and to impress them with a due sense of their own ignorance, and inexperience, and feebleness. Now if it be true, as has been above pointed out, that the Christian's condition in this present life is closely analogous to that of children—that we are still in the infancy of our being, compared with what we hope to become hereafter—and that we are, and ever must be, children, and much less than children, in respect of our Creator—it is evidently the part of one, who would profit by this most important branch of knowledge, to exemplify in himself that conduct which he most commends in them, and to apply to himself the precepts he inculcates. If humility is especially becoming in a child, it must be so also in a Christian, who is made in a peculiar manner “a child of God;” thus placed in the relation of sonship towards a Being infinitely more above him than an earthly parent. If a child is exposed to the greatest mischiefs, both in his present state and in his future life, by arrogant presumption, and conceited confidence in his own feeble judgment, let man, weak and short-sighted as he is, remember, that the same faults in him will endanger his eternal salvation.

Having already dwelt at greater length, perhaps, than some may think requisite, on the imperfection of the human faculties, and the scantiness of man's knowledge in his present state, it is unnecessary to insist strongly in this place on the importance of that humble self-distrust, consciousness of ignorance, and lowliness of temper, which are called for in

consequence. But there is one point most important to be kept in view, which many men are apt to overlook; those, viz. who imagine themselves to be not at all deficient in humility, provided they abstain from over-rating their own talents as *compared with those of other men*: whereas it is evidently possible for a man to possess this *personal* humility, as it may be called—to think very modestly of himself in comparison of those around him, and yet greatly to over-rate the *human faculties in general*; and without giving himself credit for acuteness and profundity beyond the rest of his Species, to be guilty of rashly prying into the mysteries of the Most High, and of speculating boldly on subjects which are out of the reach, perhaps, even of the faculties of angels. No cautions against *personal* arrogance will guard a man against this (if I may so speak) *generic* arrogance, this over-estimate, of the human faculties.<sup>1</sup> No man must be satisfied with thinking modestly of himself, individually, as compared with others, unless he also form a sufficiently humble estimate of human nature itself; recollecting that the whole race of mankind are in a state of ignorance and weakness analogous to that of childhood.

§ 7 II. The second point which was mentioned, as deserving the imitation of Christians, is the Docility of children; the docility which we always find, at least in those of them who are the best disposed; and which we always commend them for possessing, and studiously inculcate. It is not enough for a child to acknowledge his imperfections, if he has no wish to improve; or to be conscious of his ignorance, unless he is willing to learn. In fact, as there is no greater obstacle to improvement—no worse impediment to learning—than arrogant self-conceit, so there is no better

---

<sup>1</sup> On the *converse* error to this,—the confidence which some feel of having attained *personal* humility, from their thinking meanly of the whole *human race*, I have offered some remarks in the note appended to the next Essay.

proof of modesty, than an eagerness to receive instruction. If we inculcate humility, it is as a step—the first and most important step—towards the attainment of excellence. Those children who conceitedly over-rate themselves, and show no deference for the precepts bestowed on them, are often the least ambitious, and always the least likely, to make great advancements.

Now if the Christian acknowledge himself to be at all in the condition of children, he should learn in this point also most carefully to take pattern from them, and to practise what he recommends to them; for while *they* have to learn what will qualify them for the state of manhood—for that short and precarious life which they will have to spend on earth—the Christian has to learn, according to the views which the Gospel presents, what may fit him for eternity. On the use he makes of the short time of probation allowed him here, in acquiring a knowledge of the will of God, and in applying that knowledge in his practice—on this it is, that his condition, his final and unalterable condition, in the next world, is represented in the Scriptures as depending.

He then who is taught such a lesson by a Master to whose authority he bows, must admit that the example of children, and the advice men are perpetually inculcating on them, will rise up against him in the day of judgment and condemn him, if his conduct in this his state of infancy, be such as he would, in his own children, censure as most culpable folly. How strongly, for example, and how justly, does every one blame a child who refuses to learn or believe any thing that does not suit his own inclinations; who will not take any thing *upon trust*, even when he is incompetent at present to understand the reasons of it; nor believe implicitly what he cannot fully comprehend, even though assured of it on the safest authority: and who arrogantly denies and rejects every thing that carries with it an appearance of difficulty, unless that difficulty be instantly and satisfactorily solved.

This example is well calculated to warn the Christian to beware, lest he lie open to the same blame in a far more important concern; remembering, that as Jesus Christ himself teaches him, “if he receive not the kingdom of heaven as a little child, he shall in no wise enter therein.”

There are, indeed, many Christians, who, (not, certainly, for want of having an instructive model recommended to their imitation in Scripture, but for want of studying that model,) instead of this childlike simplicity, and singleness of heart, and candour, are perpetually striving to fashion the word of God according to their own imaginations: perverting and explaining away every passage which does not suit their preconceived notions, and pressing, to the utmost extreme, every one that seems to support these; rejecting *this* doctrine because it appears to them unreasonable—and *that*, because it is, on their views, unworthy of the Deity—and *another*, because it is attended with some inexplicable difficulty; or insisting with uncharitable vehemence on the importance of some particular explanation, founded on the deductions of their own reason, and forming an essential part of their own theory; making no allowance even for one who substantially agrees with them, if it happen that he does not employ precisely the same form of expression; or if he contentedly believes, without being able to comprehend, what they profess to have explained.

“What, then,” it may be said, “is all employment of reason to be abandoned, and are we to teach, with the Romanists, the virtue of implicit and unenquiring faith? Are we to learn from children boundless credulity and contented ignorance?” A child himself can answer the objection, and remove whatever difficulty it involves. Ask an intelligent child whether his parents exhort him to remain contented in ignorance—to believe implicitly every thing that every one tells him, whether on good authority or not; to abstain from all inquiry—to repress all curiosity—and to use no endeavours for improving in knowledge, and attaining



truth. He will tell you, that, so far from this, they commend him for nothing more than for being properly inquisitive, and eager after information; that they exhort him to take nothing upon trust that he is capable of sifting thoroughly, and examining and proving satisfactorily to himself; and that they assiduously warn him against being over-credulous, and hasty in admitting on slender proofs what he hears from persons undeserving of credit. He will tell you, however, that they nevertheless caution him against an indiscriminate, and presumptuous, and prying curiosity; that they assure him there are some points of knowledge unsuitable to his age; and many which are beyond the reach of his present faculties: which it would be unprofitable, and even mischievous, for him to pry into unseasonably; that he must wait with patience till his reason is matured; since there is enough of what is necessary and useful for him to learn, to occupy all his attention in the mean time; and that even of what he has to learn at present, there are many parts which he cannot, as yet, fully comprehend; and which therefore he must be content to believe implicitly, on the authority of his instructors, in whose veracity and judgment he has the best reason to confide.

Is not this the system of instruction which is adopted by the most judicious teachers? and is there any thing inconsistent in this? Is it not possible at once to encourage profitable, and to repress impertinent curiosity; to check indiscriminate credulity, yet to require implicit faith, (on sufficient authority,) in subjects beyond the reach of the learner's faculties—and to encourage inquiry about such as are *not* beyond his reach? Now if this be the wisest and best way of instructing children, can we doubt, or can we wonder, or can we complain, that our great Master, "our Father which is in heaven," has adopted this same method in the instruction of us, in our present state of childhood here on earth?

The Christian is taught in the Scriptures he receives, and

most wisely taught, to make it his careful and constant study to distinguish what subjects are, and what are not, within the reach of his faculties; that while he avoids presumptuous inquiries, he may at the same time be diligently pursuing such knowledge as is attainable and profitable.

There have been indeed sceptical philosophers, who have perversely inferred, from the limited and imperfect nature of the human faculties, that all inquiries after truth are vain; and have thought, or pretended to think, that since we understand so little of any subjects on which we may speculate, we ought to sit down contented in universal doubt, and universal indifference, respecting all. But it is surely something even beyond a childish absurdity to conclude, that because we cannot do all we wish, we therefore should do nothing at all; that because we are aware of the limits of our faculties, therefore we should not employ them as far as they extend. A man who is compelled to travel in the twilight, may *wish* indeed that the sun would rise; but in the mean time makes the best use he can of the light that *is* afforded him; he still employs his eyes, and still is able to see with them, to a profitable purpose; though he cannot see so far as in broad day-light. Only, if he is prudent, he will take heed not to forget how faint a glimmering it is that he now enjoys, lest he incur danger by heedlessly running too far from the path; nor will he allow himself to form too hasty a judgment concerning the prospect around him, while viewed by this imperfect light.

The Christian then, though warned not to attempt to be “wise *above* what is written,” is yet excited by the very same example, diligently to study and strive to improve in the knowledge of that which God *has* thought fit to reveal in this life; hoping to attain a more perfect knowledge in a better state. And if he would resemble, in all that is worthy of imitation, such a child as he would wish his own children to be, he will come to the study with a disposition meekly and candidly to receive the word of God, whatever

he shall find it to be : not searching the Scriptures for arguments to confirm his pre-conceived opinions ; but honestly forming his opinions *from* what he reads ; and cheerfully acquiescing in whatever he may find to be revealed, however repugnant to the prejudices, and galling to the pride of human nature. *That* faith, without which the Scriptures tell us “it is impossible to please God”—which they uniformly represent as of the nature of a moral virtue, and as the first step in the Christian’s progress—does not consist (as the unthinking scoffer pretends) in assenting to a proposition *without* sufficient evidence, but in a disposition candidly and fairly to *weigh* the evidence—in a due distrust of the human faculties—and in a readiness to admit whatever shall appear to be clearly taught by our divine Instructor, even though it be such as we should never have expected, nor can clearly comprehend. Such is the *docility* which men require of children, and which they approve and commend in them ; and such also is the docility which they must require of themselves, if they would attain the approbation of their heavenly Father.

§ 8 III. The last and not least important point in which the example of children is to be imitated, is that which has been called their *resignation* ; I mean, the entire, devoted, contented, and affectionate submission of a well-disposed child to his parent’s will ; his ready and cheerful obedience, even to commands of which he cannot understand the reason ; his full and contented confidence in parental care and kindness, even in cases where his father’s conduct is unintelligible to him.

Every one knows how many things it is necessary for children to do, and to submit to, of which they cannot at the time understand the necessity : and we should not much commend the dutiful obedience of that child, who should then only submit to his parent’s will, when he comprehended the reasons of his commands : nor should we think

well of a child's disposition, whose affections were alienated from a tender parent, and who distrusted that parent's kindness, merely on the ground of his being obliged to practise some irksome duties, and submit to some troublesome restraints, whose importance could not as yet be explained to him. Let any one but consider, which of the two would be regarded as the more amiable, and the more sensible child—such an one as this last, or the one before described, as full of confidence, love, and submission. And if the Christian feels no hesitation in deciding this question, let him next consider, which of the two it behoves him to resemble.

Placed as Man is at an immeasurable distance from the stupendous Author of our being, and in a state of infancy, compared with the future life he looks forward to, it may well be expected that he should be incapable of understanding the reasons of all God's commands, and the whole system of his dealings with his creatures. But enough may surely be understood, to convince those who are well disposed, that they may safely trust to his fatherly care and goodness—that He deserves our sincere affection and devoted obedience—and that “all things work together for good to them that love Him.” It is therefore man's duty, as well as interest, cheerfully to comply with his will, even when he neither knows the reason of his commands nor understands why that knowledge is withheld from him.

Thus much however all may clearly understand: that if this life be a state of *probation*, as every thing around us declares that it is, we might even antecedently expect, that, among other moral qualities, a trial should be made of our humility also,—of our patience,—of our devotion to God,—and firm trust in Him; a trial which could not take place, if men could in every instance fully understand the wisdom of the Almighty Ruler's designs, and perceive the fitness of his injunctions. The Christian then is evidently called

upon in this point also, to pursue the same conduct himself which he recommends in children; *resigning himself* with affectionate devotion into the hands of God; not presuming to find fault with any thing he does not understand, nor giving way to distrust, wherever he perceives a difficulty.<sup>1</sup>

Some, however, find means practically to evade the force of that lesson, which the example of children is intended to convey. That a child is right in showing filial affection, and in submitting to parental authority, they see and acknowledge, on the ground that they themselves perceive that this is for his benefit; whereas *they* do *not* perceive how God's designs tend to their benefit: not considering, that neither can the child himself fully understand this at the time; but implicitly takes it for granted. Now if we are in a condition analogous to childhood, we must put ourselves in the place of the *child himself*, not of a *by-stander*, whose

<sup>1</sup> "A child meets with perpetual difficulties, which appear to its then comprehension unconquerable, which yet, when it becomes a man, clear up and vanish of themselves. It cannot be made to understand the reason or the meaning of half the things which its parents and its masters make it do or suffer . . . . ."

"How is this to be reconciled, a child will naturally ask, with that kindness, and love, and goodness, which it is told to expect from its parents? Now, as the child advances in reason and observation, all these difficulties solve themselves. He remembers with gratitude what he suffered with complaint. . . . ."

"Look to the whole of our existence, and the wisest and oldest of us are yet but in our infancy. . . . We know in part: a certain portion of our nature, existence, and destiny we do see; but it is a portion bounded by narrow limits;—a term out of eternity. Now all such partial knowledge must be

encumbered with many difficulties; it is like viewing the map of a district, or small tract of territory, by itself, and separated from the adjacent country: we see rivers marked out, without any source to flow from, and running where there is nothing to receive them. In like manner we observe events in the world, of which we trace not either cause or origin, and tending to no design or purpose that we can discover. If the child have patience to wait, many of these difficulties will in due time be explained. And this is our case. It was not necessary to the child's happiness and well-being, that it should have, from the first, the understanding of a man; nor is it to ours, that we should possess the faculties of angels, or those which are in reversion for us in a higher and more advanced state of existence." Paley's *Sermons*.

He is indebted, however, to Tucker's *Light of Nature*, for the admirable illustration cited in this passage.

knowledge of the circumstances is more complete : we must consider, not merely whether the conduct of the child does, in fact, tend eventually to his own benefit, and is such as a person *would* direct, who knew *better than the child himself* can know, wherein the benefit consists ; but we must also consider, whether the child himself, even with the imperfect knowledge which *he* now possesses, does not act wisely in submitting and trusting to his parents ; and if it be decided that he *has* good reason for so doing, it is incumbent on those who are in a corresponding condition, and have the same imperfect knowledge, to follow his example. For if man in his present state *could* fully perceive and understand that what is commanded him is for his good, his case would *not*, then, be analogous to that of children ; since *they cannot*, while children, understand the designs of their parents.

The question is, therefore, is it a mark of folly in children to be dutiful, affectionate, and submissive ? Shall we say that such children are *right* indeed, but right only by *accident*, in thus trusting to their parents ; and that they have, at the time when they do so, no just ground for reposing such confidence in them ? No one would surely maintain such an opinion. If then we acknowledge the conduct of dutiful children to be wise — wise, that is, *in them*, under the circumstances in which they are placed—it is for us to make it the pattern of our own. An amiable, and well-disposed, and intelligent child never reasons in this manner : “ My father’s designs are inscrutable to me, and therefore I cannot tell whether the steps he may next take will be for my benefit, or the contrary : he *may* have very good reasons for all he does ; but since I cannot understand his reasons for occasionally subjecting me to pain and privation, I cannot tell but that he may hereafter see sufficient reasons, equally unintelligible to me, for devoting me undeservedly to misery and destruction ; and therefore I have no ground for trusting to his kindness :” such, I say, are not the reasonings which

pass through the mind of a well-disposed child ; who, notwithstanding his incapacity to explain to himself the reasons of his being sometimes exposed to pain and inconvenience, feels, nevertheless, an undoubting confidence (and surely it is not an unreasonable and ill-grounded confidence) that his father loves him, and seeks his real benefit, and understands how to promote it far better than he does himself.

The disciple of Christ, then, is taught to profit by such an example ; and, without being dismayed by his inability to explain the evils which appear in the creation,<sup>1</sup> to trust fully (as he has good reason) in the loving-kindness of God towards those who diligently serve Him, who conform cheerfully to his commandments, and who rely firmly on his promises.

§ 9 And let it not be forgotten, that that feature in the Gospel-system of instruction which has been here noticed, the proposal of such an example for man's imitation in his present state, is one of the circumstances *peculiar* to *Christianity*—strikingly characteristic of it—and strongly confirming its divine origin, its importance, and its excellence.

As it is obviously a great advantage to teach not merely by precept, but by example, so, that advantage is much enhanced, if the example employed be one which is *always at hand* : nor could a more *suitable* pattern, than the one in question, have been presented to the imitation of creatures, standing in such a relation as we do to the Creator ; and whose present life is designed as a preparation for a more perfect and exalted state hereafter. Yet, the best heathen moralists, even those who taught, and professed to believe, a future state, had not recourse to, or at least did not usually employ, this mode of instruction. They spoke much of the beauty of virtue—of the dignity of human nature—of the

---

<sup>1</sup> See note (L) at the end of this Essay.

heroism of striving to rise above the vulgar mass of mortals ; but they did not enough consider that the first step to elevation is *Humility* ; that though the palace of Wisdom be indeed a lofty structure, its entrance is low, and it forbids admission without bending. They knew not, or at least taught not, that our Nature must be exalted by first understanding and acknowledging the full amount of its weakness and imperfection. “ Jesus called unto Him a little child, and set him in the midst : ” what other teacher ever did the like ? What other teacher, indeed, ever completely “ knew what was in man,” and understood thoroughly how to remedy the defects of his Nature, and to fit him for a better state ?

While this admirable peculiarity of our great Master’s system of instruction is gratefully acknowledged by the Christian, let him be careful also to take advantage of it, and not to lose the benefit of the example which Christ has proposed for our imitation. It is not enough to acknowledge in general terms that man’s condition on earth is analogous to that of children, in the scantiness of his knowledge, and the imperfection of his faculties ; and that we ought to take pattern from their humble docility, and cheerful confidence, and implicit obedience : he who would actually profit by this pattern, must make their condition, and character, and conduct his habitual study—a study which no one can ever want opportunities of pursuing. We must “ call a little child, and set him in the midst of us : ” we must carefully and frequently examine into all the details of the condition, the habits of mind, and duties, of children : and if we are fully and habitually impressed with the similarity of our situation to theirs, in a multitude of particulars, then, and then only, we shall be enabled to profit adequately by the example they afford us.

By such a moral training will the Christian be fitted, through God’s help, for that more perfect, that happy and exalted, state, in which his doubts will be dispelled,—his



knowledge cleared up and extended,—his faith swallowed up in certainty,—and his nature purified and elevated so as to approach more nearly to that of his divine Master. “Brethren,” says the Apostle John, “we know not what we shall be; but we know, that, when He shall appear, we shall be *like* Him; for we shall SEE HIM AS HE IS.”

---

## NOTES TO ESSAY V.

---

NOTE K, page 175.

THE following account of a person born blind, and couched by Mr. Chesselden, (extracted from the *Philosophical Transactions*) affords an interesting illustration of some of my remarks.

*“ Observations made by Mr. W. Chesselden, on a young gentleman who was born blind, or lost his sight so early that he had no recollection of ever having seen, and was couched between thirteen and fourteen years of age.*

“ When he first saw, he was so far from making any judgment about distances, that he thought all objects whatever touched his eyes (as he expressed it), as what he felt did, his skin; and thought no objects so agreeable as those which were smooth and regular, though he could form no judgment of their shape, or guess what it was in any object that was pleasing to him; he knew not the shape of any thing, nor any one thing from another; but upon being told what things were, whose form he knew before from feeling, he would carefully observe that he might know them again; but having too many objects to learn at once, he forgot many of them, and, as he said, at first, learned to know, and forgot again a thousand things in a day. One particular I will relate: having often forgotten which was the cat and which the dog, he was ashamed to ask; but catching the cat (which he knew by feeling) he was observed to look at her steadfastly, and then setting her down said, ‘ So Puss! I shall know you another time.’

“ He was very much surprised that those things which he had liked best did not appear most agreeable in his eyes; expecting those persons would appear most beautiful whom he loved most, and such things to be most agreeable to his sight that were so to his taste. We thought he soon knew what pictures represented; but we found afterwards we were mistaken, for about two months after he was couched, he discovered all at once that they represented solid bodies; whereas to that time he considered them only as party-coloured planes, or surfaces diversified with variety of paint; but even then he was no less surprised, expecting the pictures would feel like the

things they represented; and was amazed when he found those parts, which by their light and shadow appeared round and uneven, felt flat like the rest; and he asked what was the *lying* sense, feeling or seeing?

"Being shewn his father's picture in a locket at his mother's watch, and told what it was, he acknowledged it a likeness, but was vastly surprised, asking how it could be that a large face could be expressed in so little room; saying it should have seemed as impossible to him, as to put a bushel of any thing into a pint. At first he could bear but very little sight, and the things he saw he thought extremely large; but on seeing things larger, those first seen he conceived less, never being able to imagine any lines beyond the bounds he saw; the room he was in, he said, he knew to be but part of the house, yet he could not conceive that the whole house could look bigger. Before he was couched he expected little advantage from seeing, worth undergoing an operation for, except reading and writing; for he said he thought he could have no more pleasure in walking abroad than he had in the garden, which he could do very safely and readily. And even blindness, he observed, had this advantage, that he could go any where in the dark, much better than those who can see; and after he had seen he did not soon lose this quality, nor desire a light to go about the house in the night. He said every new object was a new delight, and the pleasure was so great, that he wanted ways to express it; but his gratitude to his operator he could not conceal; never seeing him for some time without tears of joy in his eyes, and other marks of affection; and if he did not happen to come, at any time when he was expected, he would be so grieved that he could not forbear crying at his disappointment.

"A year after first seeing, being carried upon Epsom Downs, and observing a large prospect, he was exceedingly delighted with it, and called it a new kind of seeing.

"And now being lately couched of his other eye, he says that objects at first appeared large to this eye, but not so large as they did at first to the other; and looking upon the same object with both eyes, he thought it looked about twice as large as with the first couched eye only, but not double, that we can discover."

#### NOTE L, page 195.

THE sentiments here expressed, are more fully developed and explained in the Appendix (No. 2.) to Dr. King's *Discourse on Predestination*; from which I take the liberty of citing one passage, as necessary to illustrate what has been said: "Our notions of the

moral attributes of the Deity are not derived (as Dr. Paley contends they are) from a bare contemplation of the created universe, without any notions of what is antecedently probable, to direct and aid our observations. Nor is it true (few indeed would now, I apprehend, assent to that part of his doctrine) that man has no moral faculty—no natural principle of preference for virtue rather than vice—benevolence rather than malice; but that being compelled by the view of the universe to admit that God is benevolent, he is thence led, from prudential motives alone,<sup>1</sup> to cultivate benevolence in himself, with a view to secure a future reward.”

The truth I conceive is exactly the reverse of this; viz. that man having in himself a moral faculty, (or taste, as some prefer to call it,) by which he is instinctively led to approve virtue and disapprove vice, is thence disposed and inclined antecedently, to attribute to the Creator of the Universe, the most perfect and infinitely highest of Beings, all those moral (as well as intellectual) qualities which to himself seem the most worthy of admiration, and intrinsically beautiful and excellent: for to do evil rather than good, appears to all men (except to those who have been very long hardened and depraved by the extreme of wickedness) to imply something of weakness, imperfection, corruption, and degradation. I say, “*disposed and inclined*,” because our admiration for benevolence, wisdom, &c. would not *alone* be sufficient to make us attribute these to the Deity, if we saw *no* marks of them in the creation; but our finding in the creation many marks of contrivance, and of beneficent contrivance, *together with* the antecedent bias in our own minds, which inclines us to attribute goodness to the supreme Being—*both these conjointly*, lead us to the conclusion that God is infinitely benevolent notwithstanding the admixture of evil in his works, which we cannot account for. But these appearances of evil would stand in the way of such a conclusion, if man really were, what Dr. Paley represents him, a Being destitute of all moral sentiment,—all innate and original admiration for goodness: he would in that case be more likely to come to the conclusion (as many of the heathen seem actually to have done) that the Deity was a Being of a mixed, or of a capricious nature; an idea which, shocking as it is to every well-constituted mind, would not be so in the least, to such a mind as Dr. Paley attributes to the whole Human Species.

To illustrate this argument a little further, let us suppose a tasteful architect, and a rude savage, to be both contemplating a magnificent building, unfinished, or partially fallen to ruin; the one, not being at all able to comprehend the complete design, nor having any

---

<sup>1</sup> See Paley's *Moral Philosophy*, book ii. ch. 3.

taste for its beauties if perfectly exhibited, would not attribute any such design to the author of it; but would suppose the prostrate columns and rough stones to be as much designed as those that were erect and perfect; the other, would sketch out in his own mind something like the perfect structure of which he beheld only a part; and though he might not be able to explain how it came to be unfinished or decayed, would conclude that some such design was in the mind of the builder: though this same man, if he were contemplating a mere rude heap of stones which bore *no* marks of design at all, would not in *that* case draw such a conclusion.

Or, again, suppose two persons, one having an ear for music, and the other totally destitute of it, were both listening to a piece of music imperfectly heard at a distance, or half drowned by other noises, so that only some notes of it were distinctly caught, and others were totally lost, or heard imperfectly; the one might suppose that the sounds he heard were all that were actually produced, and think the whole that met his ear to be exactly such as was designed; but the other would form some notion of a piece of real music, and would conclude that the interruptions and imperfections of it were not parts of the design, but were to be attributed to his imperfect hearing: though if he heard, on another occasion, a mere confusion of sounds, without any melody at all, he would not conclude that any thing like music was designed.

"The application is obvious: the wisdom and goodness discernible in the structure of the Universe, but imperfectly discerned, and blended with evil, leads a man who has an innate approbation of those attributes, to assign them to the Author of the Universe, though he be unable to explain that admixture of evil; but if man were destitute of moral sentiments, the view of the Universe, such as it appears to us, would hardly lead him to that conclusion."

It has been maintained that the doctrine here attributed to Paley is not really what he designed to convey. I should be happy to see this satisfactorily proved, respecting an author whom I value highly, and never differ from without regret: especially as this would deprive, what I consider as a hurtful error, of the sanction of a deservedly popular name. But still the sense conveyed by his language, to ordinary readers at least, being such as it is, the reason remains the same for controverting the doctrine so conveyed. Against *Dr. Paley*, either personally or as an author, the objections are not directed; but against the *notions* involved in the most natural and obvious construction of his expressions.

It has also been said that to judge of the divine benevolence, or other attributes, in any degree, from what we find in ourselves, is inconsistent with *Dr. King's* statement of the *dissimilarity* between the attributes of God and of Man.

But this objection is founded on a mistake or a misrepresentation, of Dr. King's meaning ; who (as I have endeavoured to shew in the note appended to Essay II. of this volume) represents the divine attributes as being the "same" with ours, *in the only sense* (though in a less degree) in which any one *man's* qualities can be the "same" as another's. (See the Article "Same," in the Appendix to *Elements of Logic*.)

---

## ESSAY VI.

---

### ON THE OMISSION OF A SYSTEM OF ARTICLES OF FAITH, LITURGIES, AND ECCLESIASTICAL CANONS.

---

I HAVE dwelt, in the two preceding Essays, on the *practically*-instructive character of the revelation which the Gospel furnishes. But there is an omission in the New Testament Scriptures, which from that very circumstance is the more striking, inasmuch as it seems to leave unsupplied a most important practical want. No such thing is to be found in our Scriptures as a Catechism or regular *Elementary Introduction* to the Christian Religion; nor do they furnish us with any thing of the nature of a systematic Creed,—set of Articles,—Confession of Faith, or by whatever other name one may designate a regular, complete Compendium of Christian doctrines. Nor again do they supply us with a Liturgy for ordinary Public Worship, or with forms of administering the Sacraments, or of conferring Holy Orders: nor do they even give any precise *directions* as to these and other ecclesiastical matters;—any thing that at all corresponds to a Rubric or set of Canons.<sup>1</sup>

And this omission is, as I have said, of a widely different character from the one before mentioned; since all these are things of manifest practical utility, and by no means calculated to gratify mere idle curiosity.

---

<sup>1</sup> See Essay II. *on the Kingdom of Christ*, §§ 10 and 16. See also the excellent work of Vitringa, *on The Synagogue and the Church*, abridged and translated by the Rev. J. Bernard.

We are from childhood so familiar with that collection of books which we call the Bible, (I mean, with the drift and general character of each of them) that few Christians probably have ever thought of considering whether these books are (in respect, that is, not of their matter, but of the general purpose of each) precisely such as we should have antecedently expected; and whether they are *all* that we should have expected to find transmitted to us, supposing we now heard for the first time of the Christian Revelation, and of a collection of writings in which it is recorded. But for this familiarity, every one would, I think, be struck with the circumstance, as something very remarkable, that these writings contain neither Catechism, Creed, nor Rubric, nor any thing answering the purpose of any of these. And the more we reflect on the subject, viewing not merely the abstract probabilities of the case, but also what has actually occurred in respect of other religions, the more strongly I think we shall feel, that the first founders of a religion might naturally have been expected to have transmitted to posterity some, more or less systematic, compositions, such as I have been speaking of.<sup>1</sup>

For if we look, for instance, to the Koran, we find Mahomet, in the midst of much extraneous matter fitted only to gratify the appetite for the marvellous, inserting however, also, not only a precise description of the Mahometan Faith, but likewise minute directions concerning Fasts, Prayers, Ablutions,—the amount of Alms,—and all other points of the Mussulman's service of God. The same is represented to be the character of the Hindoo Shaster, and other Pagan books professing to contain a divine revelation of any system of religion.

And that there is nothing in the Christian religion considered in itself, that stands in the way of such a procedure, is plain from the number of works of this description which

---

<sup>1</sup> See the Articles "Catechism," &c. in Eden's *Theological Dictionary*.



have appeared from the earliest times, (*after the age of inspiration*),<sup>1</sup> down to the present;—from the writings entitled the “Apostles’ Creed,” and the “Apostolical Constitutions,” &c. (compositions of uncertain authors, and amidst the variety of opinions respecting them, never regarded as Scripture) down to the modern Formularies and Confessions of Faith.

Nor again can it be said that there was anything in the Founders of the religion, any more than in the religion itself, which, humanly speaking, should seem likely to preclude them from transmitting to us such compositions. On the contrary, the Apostles, and the rest of the earlier preachers of Christianity, were brought up Jews; accustomed, in their earliest notions of religion, to refer to the Books of the Law, as containing precise statements of their Belief, and most minute directions as to religious Worship and Ceremonies. So that to give complete and regular instructions as to the character and the requisitions of the new religion, as it would have been natural, for any one, was more especially to be expected of these men.

§ 2 Dr. Hawkins, in his excellent little work on *Tradition*,<sup>2</sup> (which deserves to be much better known than

<sup>1</sup> A proof, it should be observed, is thus afforded, that the New Testament Books are no *forgery* of the early Christians, since these would have been sure to insert what we do find in their own acknowledged writings, and which is altogether wanting in the Sacred Books.

The same inference may be drawn from the entire absence in the New Testament of the title of *Christians* as applied by themselves to each other. It seems to have been adopted by Christians very early; probably soon after the destruction of Jerusalem: and if the Books of the New Testament had been forged or interpolated by them, at that, or at any subsequent period, there can be no doubt we should have found

it frequently so employed therein. In the New Testament, however, as it is, the title never once occurs, except as employed by those who were *not* Christians. They themselves always used exclusively those titles which had been applied to God’s People of old; such as “Saints,” (*i. e.* an “*Holy* People,”) “Elect,” or “Chosen,” “Brethren,” &c., in order I suppose to point out the more emphatically that the believers, of whatever Race after the flesh, were to be regarded as “Abraham’s Seed,” and the “Israel of God.” See Eden’s *Theological Dictionary*, Art. “Christian.” See also the *Sermon on Christian Saints*.

<sup>2</sup> It is entitled *On unauthoritative Tradition*, *i. e.* such Tradition as does

it is,) has clearly pointed out the *fact*, that the New Testament does not contain an elementary introduction to the Christian religion, or a compendium of Christian doctrines: "Why," says he, "are many of the Christian doctrines so *indirectly taught* in the Scriptures?—is a question sometimes put not merely by those who doubt or disbelieve the doctrines, but by very sincere believers, by those even who have ascertained their truth with abundant learning and ability. Why, they ask, are many of the most important articles of faith rather implied than taught? why have we to learn them in great measure from incidental notices of books written upon particular occasions, controversies, or heresies, many of them long since passed away, whilst some men have erred through ignorance of these particulars, and some have been at times perplexed although they have embraced the truth, and some have missed altogether that faith in which all are most concerned to live? why this difficulty, they ask, when more *direct and systematic* statements of the main points of faith might have been with equal ease delivered by the same authority, and would of course, from believers, have met with implicit veneration?"<sup>1</sup>

Some persons, he goes on to observe, may have failed to notice this indirect and unsystematic character of the instruction which the New Testament affords, from their having themselves received from other sources, a more regular instruction in Scripture doctrines: "Thoroughly convinced by the authority of Scripture, they may not have attended strictly to the process by which their own conviction of the

---

not claim that "authority" which is due to the words of inspired and infallible men. *Some degree* of "authority," viz. such as to produce a *prima facie presumption* on its side, Tradition does possess.

On the ambiguity of the word "authority," I have offered some remarks in a *Treatise on the Errors of Romanism*: ch. iv. § 5. p. 193. See

also *Elements of Logic*, Art. "Authority."

<sup>1</sup> See *Appendix to Logic*, on the ambiguity of the word "Why." In the sense of "*from what cause?*" Dr. H. has, I think, fully answered the question: in another of its senses, "*for what purpose?*" he has much more slightly touched on it. Now this is the sense I now have in view.

truth of the Christian doctrines has been established; although resting them entirely upon Scriptural authority, they may not have *first* collected them solely and immediately from the Scriptures. Hence they may not have observed that the various proofs of a given doctrine have been accumulated perhaps from the parts of the sacred Volume, the most unconnected apparently with each other; that one text, occasionally, of the greatest importance towards their conviction, had no force at all in that respect until compared with another, and that perhaps with a third, each separately incapable of bearing upon the point in question, but all, together, composing an indissoluble argument, of so much the more force indeed, as it precludes the possibility of forgery and interpolation.”<sup>1</sup> In this manner important doctrines often receive strong confirmation from collations of texts in the New Testament with corresponding passages in the Jewish Scriptures: for example, the glory of Christ spoken of by St. John, (xii, 41.) and the dignity of the Holy Ghost according to the words of St. Paul, (Acts xxviii. 25.) are signally illustrated by referring to the passage in the prophecies of Isaiah, (Is. vi. 1—10.) to which both the apostles allude. Again, in proof of a single doctrine we are accustomed to combine the declaration of John the Baptist concerning Christ, “he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost,” as recorded by the first three Evangelists (Matt. iii. 11. Mark i. 8. Luke iii. 6.) with our Lord’s assertion in St. John’s Gospel, “Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God,” (John iii. 5.) and with the expression of Paul to Titus, God has “saved us by the washing of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Ghost,” (Tit. iii. 5.) Another instance of complex proof of doctrines might be the comparison of the following texts: “All Scripture,” says St. Paul to Timothy, “is given

---

<sup>1</sup> This circumstance is very important, and constitutes one of the many advantages (to be noticed hereafter) of the omission I am treating of.

by inspiration of God," (2 Tim. iii. 15, 16.) and is "able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus"—"of which salvation," says St. Peter, (1 Pet. i. 10.) "the prophets have inquired and searched diligently—searching what or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify—unto whom it was revealed, that unto us they did minister the things which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the Gospel unto you with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven:" and in this the Apostle confirms the promises in St. John's Gospel, (John xiv. 26. xvi. 13. xv. 26.) whilst in another Epistle he declares the inspiration of the old prophets also to have proceeded from the Holy Ghost; "For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost." (2 Pet. i. 21.) It is only in combination with each other that these passages throw light upon the inspiration of both the Old and New Testaments by the same supreme Being, and attest at the same time the unity of the three Persons in the Divine nature.

It is obvious that those who are more accustomed to the language of the uninspired advocates for the Christian doctrines, than to the study of the Scriptures themselves, may not have observed the complex structure of the very proofs by which their faith was chiefly established. From the same cause they may often suppose particular doctrines to be directly asserted in texts, which in fact only imply and assume them; because the commentators, with perfect propriety, so far as the truth and soundness of their argument is concerned, but incorrectly with respect to the form of the original words, quote as direct declarations of a doctrine the passages which indirectly indicate the sacred writer's belief of it.<sup>1</sup> In this manner the fifth chapter of St. Paul's Epistle

---

<sup>1</sup> See, for example, Whitby's quotation of 1 Cor. xv. 22, in his note upon Rom. v. 12.

to the Romans is frequently appealed to with respect to the doctrine of original sin; and yet throughout the chapter the consequences of Adam's transgression are not taught, but rather assumed by the Apostle as already known to his readers, in order to argue from them to the corresponding extent of the gracious consequences of Christ's atonement.

Dr. Hawkins has not only clearly set forth the fact of this omission of systematic instruction in our Scriptures, but has accounted for it most easily and satisfactorily, *as far as regards the existing books*; that is, he has pointed out that the Gospels, the Book of Acts, and the Apostolic Epistles being all of them written to Christians,—all, designed for such as had already received instruction in the rudiments of the Christian faith, and had then embraced it, and after due examination, had been admitted members of the Church, it could not be expected that books addressed to such readers should contain any regular elementary instruction, or compendious Confession of Faith.

But all this does not at all explain (nor did it come within Dr. H.'s design to explain) why, besides these, there should not have been other books also transmitted to us, which should have supplied the deficiency. It was indeed not at all to be expected that the Gospels, the Acts, and those Epistles which have come down to us, should have been, considering the circumstances in which they were written, any thing different from what they are: but the question still recurs, why should not the Apostles or their followers have also committed to paper, what we are sure must have been perpetually in their mouths, regular instruction to Catechumens, Articles of Faith, Prayers, and directions as to Public Worship, and administration of the Sacraments?

§ 3 Supposing that the other avocations of the Apostles would not allow any of *them* leisure for such compositions,—though we know that some of them did find time for writing,

two of them, not a little,—even this supposition does not at all explain the difficulty; for the Acts, and two of the Gospels were written by men who were only attendants on the Apostles. Nor would such writings as I am speaking of have required an *inspired* penman; only, one who had *access* to persons thus gifted. We know with what care the Apostolic Epistles were preserved, first by the churches to which they were respectively sent, and afterwards, by the others also, as soon as they received copies. How comes it then that no one of the Elders (Presbyters) of any of these Churches should have written down, and afterwards submitted to the revision of an Apostle, that outline of catechetical instruction—that elementary introduction to the Christian faith—which they must have received at first from that Apostle’s mouth, and have afterwards employed in the instruction of their own converts? Why did none of them record any of the Prayers, of which they must have heard so many from an Apostle’s mouth, both in the ordinary devotional assemblies, in the administration of the Sacraments, and in the “laying on of hands,” by which they themselves had been ordained?

Paul, after having given the most general exhortations to the Corinthians for the preservation of decent regularity in their religious meetings, adds, “the rest will I set in order when I come.” And so doubtless he did; and so he must have done, by verbal directions, in all the other churches also: is it not strange then that these verbal directions should nowhere have been committed to writing? This would have seemed a most obvious and effectual mode of precluding all future disorders and disputes; as also the drawing up of a compendious statement of Christian doctrines, would have seemed a safeguard against the still more important evil of heretical error. Yet if any such statements and formularies *had* been drawn up, with the sanction, and under the revision of an Apostle, we may be sure they would have been preserved and transmitted to posterity, with the most scrupulous

and reverential care. The conclusion therefore seems inevitable, that either no one of the numerous Elders and Catechists ever thought of doing this, or else, that they were forbidden by the Apostles to execute any such design; and each of these alternatives seems to me alike inexplicable by natural causes.

For it should be remembered that, when other points are equal, it is much more difficult to explain a *negative* than a *positive* circumstance in our Scriptures. There is something, suppose, in the New Testament, which the first promulgators of Christianity,—considered as mere unassisted men,—were not likely to write; and there is something else, which they were, we will suppose, equally unlikely to omit writing; now these two difficulties are by no means equal. For, with respect to the former, if we can make out that *any one* of these men might have been, by nature or by circumstances, qualified and induced to undertake the work, the phenomenon is solved. To point out even a single individual able and likely to write it, would account for its being written. But it is not so with respect to the other case, that of omission. Here, we have to *prove a negative*;—to show, not merely that this or that man was likely not to write what we find omitted, but that *no one* was likely to write it. Suppose we could make out the possibility or probability of Paul's having left no Creed, Catechism, or Canons, why have we none from the pen of Luke, or of Mark? Suppose this also explained, why did not John or Peter supply the deficiency? And why again did none of the numerous Bishops and Presbyters whom they ordained, undertake the work under their direction? The difficulty therefore in this case exceeds the other, *cæteris paribus*, more than a hundred-fold.

§ 4 It is not, I think, unlikely that some hasty and superficial reasoners may have found an objection to Christianity in the omission of which I have been speaking. It is certain that there are not a few who are accustomed to pro-

nounce this or that supposition improbable, as soon as they perceive that it involves great difficulties; without staying to examine whether there are more or fewer on the *other side* of the alternative: as if a traveller when he had the choice of two roads, should, immediately on perceiving that there were impediments in the one, decide on taking the other, before he had ascertained whether it were even passable. I can conceive some such reasoners exclaiming, in the present case, "Surely if the Apostles had really been inspired by an all-wise God, they would never have omitted so essential a provision as that of a clear systematic statement of the doctrines to be believed, and the worship to be offered, so as to cut off, as far as can be done, all occasions of heresy and schism. If the deity had really bestowed a revelation on his creatures, He would have provided rules of faith and of practice, so precise and so obvious, as not to be overlooked or mistaken; instead of leaving men, whether pretending to infallibility, as the Romanists, or interpreting Scripture by the light of reason, as the Protestants, to elicit by a laborious search, and comparison of passages, what doctrines and duties are, in their judgment, agreeable to the Divine Will."

You think it was to be expected (one might reply) that God would have proceeded in this manner; and is it not at least as much to be expected *that Man would*? It is very unlikely, you say, that the Apostles would have omitted these systematic instructions, if they had really been inspired: but if they were *not*, they must have been impostors or enthusiasts; does then that hypothesis remove the difficulty? Is it not at least as unlikely, on that supposition, that no one of them, or of their numerous followers, should have taken a step so natural and obvious? All reasonable conjecture, and all experience show, that any men, but especially *Jews*, when engaged in the propagation and establishment of a religion, and acting, whether sincerely or insincerely, on their own judgment as to what was most expedient, would have done what no Christian writer during the age of (supposed)



inspiration, *has* done. One would even have expected indeed, that, as we have four distinct Gospels, so several different writers would have left us copies of the Catechisms, &c., which they were in the habit of using orally. This or that individual might have been prevented from doing so by accidental circumstances; but that every one of some hundreds should have been so prevented, amounts to a complete moral impossibility.

We have here, then, it may be said, a choice of difficulties: if the Christian religion came from God, it is, (we will suppose) very strange, and contrary to all we should have expected from the Deity, that He should have permitted in the Scriptures the omission I am speaking of: if, again, it is the contrivance of men, it is strange, and contrary to all we could have expected from *men*, that *they* should have made the omission. And now, which do we know the more of, God, or Man? Whose character and designs is it of which we are the more competent judges, and the better able to decide what may reasonably be expected of each; the Creator, or our fellow-creatures? And as there can be no doubt about the answer to this question, so, the conclusion which follows from that answer is obvious. If the alternative were presented to me, that either something has been done by persons with whose characters I am intimately acquainted, utterly at variance with their nature, and unaccountable, or else that some man to whom I am personally a stranger, (though after all, the nature of every human Being must be better known to us, than, by the light of reason, that of the Deity can be,) had done something which to me is entirely inexplicable, I should be thought void of sense if I did not embrace, as the less improbable, this latter side of the alternative.

And such is the state of the present case, to one who finds this peculiarity in the Christian Scriptures quite unaccountable on either supposition. The argument is complete, whether we are able or not, to perceive any wise reasons for the procedure adopted. Since no one of the first promulgators

of Christianity did that which they must, some of them at least, have been *naturally* led to do, it follows that they must have been *supernaturally* withheld from it; how little soever we may be able even to conjecture the object of the prohibition. For in respect of this, and several other (humanly speaking, unaccountable) circumstances in our religion, especially that treated of in the Fourth of these Essays, it is important to observe, that the argument does not turn on the supposed *wisdom* of this or that appointment, which we conceive to be worthy of the Deity, and thence infer that the religion must have proceeded from Him; but, on the utter improbability of its *having proceeded from Man*; which leaves its divine origin the only alternative. The Christian Scriptures considered in this point of view, present to us a standing Miracle; at least, a Monument of a Miracle; since they are in several points such as we may be sure, according to all natural causes, they would *not* have been. Even though the character which these writings do in fact exhibit, be such as we cannot clearly account for on *any* hypothesis, still, if they are such as we can clearly perceive no false pretenders would have composed, the evidence is complete, though the difficulty may remain unexplained.

§ 5 Although however we cannot pretend, in every case, to perceive the reasons for what God has appointed, it is not in the present case difficult to discern the superhuman wisdom of the course adopted. If the Hymns<sup>1</sup> and forms of Prayer,—the Catechisms,—the Confessions of faith,—and the Ecclesiastical regulations, which the Apostles employed, had been recorded, these would have all been regarded as parts of *Scripture*: and even had they been accompanied by

---

<sup>1</sup> Pliny's account of the early Christians, derived in part from those who had belonged to the Society, mentions that they recited a "hymn to Christ, as to a God." This ancient hymn has not

been transmitted to us, so as to be recognised. It is not unlikely, however, that it, or some part of it, formed the basis of that which we call the *Te Deum*.

the most express declarations of the lawfulness of altering or laying aside any of them, we cannot doubt that they would have been in practice most scrupulously retained, even when changes of manners, tastes, and local and temporary circumstances of every kind, rendered them no longer the most suitable. The Jewish ritual, designed for one Nation and Country, and intended to be of temporary duration, was fixed and accurately prescribed: the same Divine Wisdom from which both dispensations proceeded, having designed Christianity for all Nations and Ages, left Christians at large in respect of those points in which variation might be desirable. But I think no *human* wisdom would have foreseen and provided for this. That a number of *Jews*, accustomed from their infancy to so strict a ritual, should, in introducing Christianity as the second part of the same Dispensation, have abstained not only from accurately prescribing for the use of all Christian Churches for ever, the mode of divine worship, but even from recording what was actually in use under their own directions, does seem to me utterly incredible, unless we suppose them to have been restrained from doing this by a special admonition of the Divine Spirit.

And we may be sure, as I have said, that if they *had* recorded the particulars of their own worship, the very words they wrote would have been invested, in our minds, with so much sanctity, that it would have been thought presumptuous to vary or to omit them, however inappropriate they might have become. The Lord's Prayer, the only one of general application that is recorded in the Scriptures, though so framed as to be suitable in all Ages and Countries, has yet been subjected to much superstitious abuse. A superstitious Christian mutters his "paternosters," as a kind of sacred charm, on all occasions, however inappropriate. And our reformers, probably in concession to a prevailing feeling that no devotions could be acceptable without it, have introduced it into every one

of the Services they drew up. And though this admirable prayer is of so general a form that no one more ordinarily suitable could be devised, I cannot think that, in some of the Occasional Services, such, for instance, as those for Baptism, and for the Churching of Women, it would have been introduced, had it not occurred in Scripture.

The Apostles' Creed, again, from its acknowledged antiquity, together with the title it bears, and the tradition (probably, in part, true<sup>1</sup>) of its being the composition of the Apostles, is held by many Protestants (to say nothing of the superstitions of some Churches on this head) in a kind of veneration which may justly be characterised as superstitious. There are Protestants of the lower orders, and some above the very lowest, who are accustomed to recite it in their private devotions as a *prayer*.

I am well aware that there must ever be danger of all prayer degenerating into a superstitious formalism; but this danger must evidently be increased in proportion as the words uttered are the less appropriate to the occasion, and to the circumstances of the petitioner: and this must inevitably have been more likely to take place with a Liturgy transmitted to us from the times of the Apostles, as a part of Scripture.

§ 6 How little that scrupulous veneration with which such a Liturgy, had it existed, would have been regarded, is necessarily connected with even an anxious wish to ascertain its meaning, and to make the mind accompany the voice, is evident from the cases above alluded to. It is evident that one who uses a creed as a form of prayer, cannot understand even its general drift. But, besides these persons, how many there are who do not (perhaps I might say, how few

---

<sup>1</sup> If, as there seems good reason for thinking, part of this creed was actually in use with the Apostles, this circumstance renders it the more remarkable

that it should not have been recorded by them in their writings. See King's (afterwards Lord King) *History of the Apostles' Creed*.

that do) understand even the nature and design of that kind of composition which is usually called a creed; viz. that it is a *symbol*, or Confession of faith, intended to ascertain the professed orthodoxy of those who adopt it; and consequently is not to be regarded as, necessarily, containing a summary of the most intrinsically important points of Christian doctrine,<sup>1</sup> but such as shall stand opposed to the particular heresies, most to be guarded against, in each Age and Country respectively.<sup>2</sup>

With respect to catechisms again,—elementary introductions to the Christian faith,—nearly the same reasons will hold good. For though the Christian religion is fundamentally “the same yesterday, and to-day, and for ever,” it is impossible that any one mode of introducing its truths to the mind of the catechumen, can be the best adapted for children and adults,—the civilized and the barbarian,—and for all the other varieties of station, sex, country, intellectual culture, and natural capacity.

Each church, therefore, was left, through the wise foresight of Him who alone “knew what is in Man,” to provide for its own wants as they should arise;—to steer its own course by the Chart and Compass which his holy Word supplies, regulating for itself the Sails and Rudder, according to the winds and currents it may meet with.

“The Apostles had begun and established precedents, which, of course, would be naturally adopted by their uninspired successors. But still, as these were only the formal means of grace, and not the blessing itself, it was equally to be expected that the church should assume a discretionary power, whenever the means established became impracticable

<sup>1</sup> “It is not, as men have supposed, that the principal heads of our faith were summed up together; but from the whole of Scripture those parts were selected which were most needful for the occasion.” (ΚΑΙΡΙΩΤΑΤΑ.) Cyril. *Catech.* cited by Bp. Pearson

in his *Exposition of the Creed*, Art. 1.

<sup>2</sup> See Lord King’s *History of the Apostles’ Creed*, a work characterised by much good sense, extraordinary learning, and a most rare degree of candour.

or clearly unsuitable, and either substitute others, or even altogether abolish such as existed. . . . It might seem at first that the apostolical precedents were literally binding on all ages: but this cannot have been intended; and for this reason, that the greater portion of the apostolical practices have been transmitted to us, not on apostolical authority, but on the authority of the uninspired church: which has handed them down with an uncertain mixture of its own appointments. How are we to know the enactments of the inspired rulers from those of the uninspired? and if there be no certain clue, we must either bring down the authority of apostolical usage to that of the uninspired church, or raise that of the uninspired church to that of the apostolical.<sup>1</sup> Now the former is, doubtless, what was, to a certain extent, intended by the Apostles themselves, as will appear from a line of distinction by which they have carefully partitioned off such of their appointments as are designed to be perpetual, from such as are left to share the possibility of change, with the institutions of uninspired wisdom.

If then we look to the account of the Christian usages contained in Scripture, nothing can be more unquestionable, than that, while some are specified, others are passed over in silence. It is not even left so as to make us imagine that those mentioned may be all: but, while some are noted specifically, the establishment of others is implied, without the particular mode of observance being given. Thus, we are all equally sure from Scripture, that Christian ministers were ordained by a certain form, and that Christians assembled in prayer; but while the precise process of laying on of hands is mentioned in the former institution, no account is given of the precise method of Church-Service, or even of any regular forms of prayer, beyond the Lord's Prayer. Even the record of the Ordination Service itself admits of the same distinction. It is quite as certain that, in it, some

---

<sup>1</sup> See Essay II. on the *Kingdom of Christ*, § 17.

prayer was used, as that some outward form accompanied the prayer; but the form is specified, the prayer left unrecorded.

“What now is the obvious interpretation of the holy Dispenser’s meaning in this mode of record? Clearly, it is, that the Apostles regulated, under His guidance, the forms and practices of the church, so as was best calculated to convey grace to the church *at that time*. Nevertheless, part of its institutions were of a nature, which, although formal, would never require a change; and these therefore were left recorded in the Scriptures, to mark this distinction of character. The others were not, indeed, to be capriciously abandoned, nor except when there should be manifest cause for so doing; but, as such a case was supposable, these were left to mingle with the uninspired precedents; the claims of which, as precedents, would be increased by this uncertain admixture, and the authority of the whole rendered so far binding, and so far subject to the discretion of the church. They might not be altered, unless sufficient grounds should appear; but the settling of this point was left to the discretion of the church.”<sup>1</sup>

§ 7 The Apostles themselves, however, and their numerous fellow-labourers, would not, I think, have been, if left to themselves, so far-sighted as to perceive (all, and each of them, without a single exception) the expediency of this procedure. Most likely, many of them,—but according to all human probability, some of them,—would have left us, as parts of Scripture, compositions such as I have been speaking of; and these, there can be no doubt, would have been scrupulously retained for ever. They would have left us Catechisms, which would have been like precise directions for the cultivation of some plant, admirably adapted to a particular soil and climate, but inapplicable in those of a

---

<sup>1</sup> Hinds’ *History*, vol. ii. p. 113—115.

contrary description: their Symbols would have stood like ancient sea-walls, built to repel the encroachments of the waves, and still scrupulously kept in repair, when perhaps the sea had retired from them many miles, and was encroaching on some different part of the coast.

There are multitudes, even as it is, who do not, even now, perceive the expediency of the omission; there are not a few who even complain of it as a defect, or even make it a ground of objection. That in that day, the reasons for the procedure actually adopted, should have occurred, and occurred to *all* the first Christians, supposing them mere unassisted men, and men too brought up in Judaism, is utterly incredible.

But besides the reason I have now been speaking of, there is another, perhaps not less important, against the providing in Scripture of a regular systematic statement of Christian doctrines. Supposing such a summary of Gospel-truths had been drawn up, and could have been contrived with such exquisite skill as to be sufficient and well-adapted for all, of every age and country, what would have been the probable result? It would have commanded the unhesitating assent of all Christians; who would, with deep veneration, have stored up the very words of it in their memory, without any need of laboriously searching the rest of the Scriptures, to ascertain its agreement with them; which is what we do (at least are evidently *called on* to do) with a *human* exposition of the faith: and the absence of this labour, together with the tranquil security as to the correctness of their belief which would have been thus generated, would have ended in a careless and contented apathy. There would have been no room for doubt,—no call for vigilant attention in the investigation of truth,—none of that effort of mind which is now requisite, in comparing one passage with another, and collecting instruction from the scattered, oblique, and incidental references to various doctrines in the existing Scriptures; and, in consequence, none of that



excitement of the best feelings, and that improvement of the heart, which are the natural, and doubtless the designed result of an humble, diligent, and sincere study of the Christian Scriptures.

In fact, all study, properly so called, of the rest of Scripture,—all lively interest in its perusal,—would have been nearly superseded by such an inspired compendium of doctrine; to which alone, as far the most convenient for that purpose, habitual reference would have been made in any questions that might arise. Both would have been regarded, indeed, as of divine authority; but the Compendium, as the fused and purified metal: the other, as the mine containing the crude ore. And the Compendium itself, being not, like the existing Scriptures, that *from which* the faith is to be learned, but *the very thing to be learned*, would have come to be regarded by most with an indolent, unthinking veneration, which would have exercised little or no influence on the character. Their orthodoxy would have been, as it were, petrified, like the bodies of those animals we read of incrustated in the ice of the polar regions; firm-fixed, indeed, and preserved unchangeable, but, cold, motionless, lifeless. It is only when our energies are roused, and our faculties exercised, and our attention kept awake, by an ardent pursuit of truth, and anxious watchfulness against error,—when, in short, we feel ourselves to be doing something towards acquiring, or retaining, or improving our knowledge,—it is then only, that that knowledge makes the requisite practical impression on the heart and on the conduct.<sup>1</sup>

§ 8 To the Church then has her all-wise Founder left the office of *teaching*, to the Scriptures, that of *proving*, the Christian doctrines;<sup>2</sup> to the Scriptures he has left the delineation of Christian *principles*, to each Church, the *application*

---

<sup>1</sup> See the present Essay, § 2, p. 207, note.

<sup>2</sup> Hawkins on *Tradition*, p. 52.

of those principles, in their Symbols, or Articles of Religion,—in their Forms of Worship,—and in their Ecclesiastical regulations.<sup>1</sup>

Against such compositions (for some of which there must always be need) drawn up by *uninspired* writers, the objections which would have existed against their forming a part of *Scripture*, do not lie: First, because we need not scruple to *alter* them from time to time, as occasions may require; and, secondly, because the very circumstance of their being not inspired, calls on us diligently to search the Scriptures, and affords a wholesome exercise to our minds in comparing the compositions of fallible men with the records of inspiration. How admirable do the provisions of Divine Wisdom appear, even from the slight and indistinct views we obtain of it! It has supplied to us, by revelation, the knowledge of what we could not have discovered for ourselves: and it has left us to ourselves, precisely in those points in which it is best for us that we should be so left.<sup>2</sup>

We may however perversely refuse to take advantage of these wise provisions, by exalting, like the Romanists, (and, I am sorry to say, some Protestants of these days,) the Creeds, Formularies, &c. which are sanctioned by Tradition,

---

<sup>1</sup> "Why may it not have been the general design of Heaven, that by early oral, or traditional, instruction, the way should be prepared for the reception of the mysteries of faith; that the church should carry down the *system*, but the Scriptures should furnish all the *proofs* of the Christian doctrines; that Tradition should supply the Christian with the *arrangement*, but the Bible, with all the *substance*, of divine truth?"—Hawkins on *Tradition*, p. 18.

<sup>2</sup> "In the present instance the want of system in the delivery of the Christian doctrines in Scripture—besides its extreme use, (before insisted upon,) in placing the *proofs* of those doctrines above the suspicion of corruption—may

no doubt be useful as a mode of trying our humility and our faith; and evidently also answers a great purpose in promoting research, and raising the curiosity of learned men especially, who might have slighted a study less intricate and arduous; whilst the very disputes and errors consequent upon obscurity have kept alive the spirit of Christianity upon the whole; and, however hurtful frequently to the individuals conversant with them, (through their own fault,) have been eminently instrumental in spreading wider, or rooting more deeply, the great truths of Revelation in other minds."—Hawkins on *Tradition*, pp. 15, 16.

and by the enactments of a Church, to a level with the Scriptures.<sup>1</sup> Then indeed we incur the evils already spoken of, with the additional one of “teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.” Such a system, accordingly, tends to foster that neglect of the study of Scripture,—that averseness to labour in the investigation of truth,—that indolent, uninquiring acquiescence in what is ready prepared for acceptance, in the lump,—to which man is by nature so much disposed,<sup>2</sup> and which the structure of the Christian Scriptures seems to have been expressly designed to guard against. And all this evil is incurred by reliance on an infallibility (either of some particular Church, or of some undefined universal Church,) which after all is only imaginary. When we inquire *what* we are to receive as sanctioned by the unerring judgment of the Universal Church, the answer usually given, is, “whatever has been believed *always, everywhere, and by all*” (quod semper, quod ubique, quod ab omnibus): but if those who gave this answer are requested to make out a list of the Articles of faith which fulfil these conditions, and to prove them to be such, they do not find it easy. They do however often find it easy to make an *unlearned* Christian believe that what their Church and their party hold, is to be received by him as possessing this claim.

If we would be Protestants, in spirit, and not merely in name, we must be careful to keep each class of compositions to its own proper use: let Catechisms, Homilies, in short, works of *Christian instruction*, be employed for instruction;—Liturgies and other devotional works, for *devotional* purposes;—Symbols or Articles of Faith, for *their* proper purpose, to

<sup>1</sup> See *Pastoral Epistle of the Pope to certain members of the University of Oxford*: a work which was loudly censured when first published, for imputing to those members a tendency towards conclusions which they have, since,

avowed! It has been reprinted along with other Tracts in Bp. Dickinson's *Remains*, edited by Rev. Dr. West.

<sup>2</sup> ἀταλαίπωρος τοῖς πολλοῖς ἡ ζήτησις τῆς ἀλήθειας, καὶ ἐπὶ τὰ ἔτοιμα μᾶλλον τρέπονται.—Thucyd.

furnish, in conjunction with the others, (for all the authorised formularies of a Church partake, in some degree, of the character of these,) a *test* of any one's fitness to be received as a member, or a minister, of each Church, respectively: and let the Scriptures, and the Scriptures only, be appealed to for a decision on questions of doctrine. It is their peculiar province to furnish *proofs*. We may call in indeed the aid of learned and judicious, but uninspired authors in cases where doubts have been raised as to the true sense of Scripture; but we must always appeal to these, along with, in *connexion* with, and in *subservience* to, the sacred writings.

“And whenever we refer, in proof or disproof of any doctrine, to the Articles or Liturgy, for instance, we not only should not appeal to them *alone*; but we should also carefully point out that we refer to them not *as* the *authorised* formularies of a *Church*, but simply as the *writings of able and pious men*, which would be deserving of attention, supposing them to be merely private sermons, &c. To refer to them as *backed by the Church's sanction*, adds to them no legitimate force in respect of the abstract truth of any position.

“Such an appeal may indeed, in practice, be decisive, (and justly so,) as far as regards members of our Church; but it is, in truth, only an ‘argumentum ad hominem.’ If any charge is to be brought *personally* against any individual, as unfit to be a member or a minister of the Church, the appeal is naturally, and rightly, made to her formularies composed for this very purpose: but when the question is not about a *person*, but a *doctrine*—when the abstract truth of any tenet is in question, ‘to the Law and to the Testimony!’ It savours of the spirit of Romanism to refer for the proof or disproof of doctrines, solely, or chiefly, to any, the most justly venerated, human authority—to any thing but the inspired Word of God. For if any one proves any thing from our Articles or Liturgy, for instance, either he could have proved it from Scripture, or he could not: if he could

*not*, he is impeaching either the Scriptural character of the Church's doctrines, or his own knowledge of the Scriptural basis on which they rest: if he *could* have proved it from Scripture, *that* is the course he should have taken: not only because he would thus have proved his point both to those who receive our Articles, and also to those who dissent from them; but also, because it is thus, and thus only, we can preserve to Scripture its due dignity and proper office, and avoid the dangerous and encroaching precedent of substituting human authority for divine."<sup>1</sup>

For it should never be forgotten, that in all probability the habit of making a final appeal to the Decrees, &c. of the Church of Rome; did not in the first instance arise from the admitted claim to infallibility, but, on the contrary, was the cause which led to that claim; a claim, indeed, which seems to have been practically admitted long before it was distinctly stated. When men had long been in the habit of making this definite appeal, on each occasion, to human decisions, their natural reluctance to think that they had been all the while following a fallible guide, would very strongly tempt them to hope, to be convinced, and to proclaim, that their guide was *infallible*. For the generality are not so much accustomed to pursue this or that course in consequence of their previous conviction that it is right, as to believe it right because they have been accustomed to pursue it.

In proportion therefore as we accustom ourselves to refer to human compositions of whose orthodoxy and excellence we are satisfied, and to *stop there*, without thinking it necessary to follow up each question to the fountain-head of Scripture, we are so far on the road to one of the most pernicious errors of Rome;—on the very road by which, in all likelihood, she herself travelled towards that error.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Errors of Romanism*, Essay iv. § 7. See also *Index to the Tracts for the Times*; Articles—"Church," "Tradition," &c.

§ 9 “But are we then,” (most Romanists, and some Protestants would ask) “to be perpetually wavering and hesitating in our faith?—never satisfied of our own orthodoxy?—always supposing or suspecting that there is something unscriptural in our Creed or in our Worship? We could but be in this condition, if Christ had *not* promised to be with his Church, ‘always, even to the end of the world;’—had *not* declared by his Apostle, that his ‘Spirit helpeth our infirmities;’ had *not* taught us to expect that where we are ‘gathered together in his Name, there is He in the midst of us.’ Are we to explain away all that Scripture says of spiritual help and guidance? Or are we to look for a certain *partial and limited* help; that the Holy Spirit will secure us from *some* errors, but lead us, or leave us, to fall into others?”

Such is the statement, the most plausible I can give in a small compass, of the Romish (but not exclusively Romish) argument, which goes to leave no medium between a claim to Infallibility on the one hand, and universal hesitation,—utter Scepticism,—on the other. An appeal to the common sense which every one, Romanist or Protestant, exercises on *all but religious* subjects, might be sufficient to prove, from the practice of those very men who use such reasoning, not only its absurdity, but their own conviction of its absurdity. In all matters which do not admit of absolute demonstration, all men, except a few of extravagant self-conceit, are accustomed to regard themselves or those under whose guidance they act, as fallible; and yet act, on many occasions,—after they have taken due pains to understand the subject, to ascertain their own competency, and to investigate the particular case before them,—without any distressing hesitation. There are questions in Medicine, in Agriculture, in Navigation, &c. which sensible men, well versed in their respective arts, would decide with sufficient confidence for all practical purposes; yet without holding themselves to be infallible, but on the contrary always keeping themselves *open* to conviction,—always *on the watch* against error,—attentive to the

lessons which observation furnishes,—ready to stand corrected if any argument shall be adduced (however little they may anticipate this) which will convict them of mistake.

“Yes,” (it may be replied,) “all this holds good in worldly matters; but in the far more important case of religious concerns, God has graciously promised us spiritual assistance, to ‘lead us into all [the] truth.’” It is most true that He has. Christ has declared, “If any man<sup>1</sup> keep my saying, my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him:”—“without Me ye can do nothing:” for if any man<sup>1</sup> have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his;” and “as many as<sup>1</sup> are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.”

But some distinction there must be, between the spiritual guidance granted to the Apostles, which was accompanied by *sensible miracles*, and all that has ever been bestowed, since the cessation of miracles. I do not mean a difference as to the *evidence for the existence* of each; for both are equally to be believed, if we have faith in the divine promises: but there must be a difference in the character of the divine assistance in the two cases, arising out of the presence, in the one, and the absence in the other, of sensibly miraculous attestation. And this difference evidently is, that in the one case, the divine agency is, in each individual instance, *known*; in the other, *unknown*. If an Apostle adopted any measure, or formed a decision on any doctrine, in consequence of a perceptible admonition from Heaven, he *knew* that he was, in this point, infallibly right. A sincere Christian, in the present day, may be no less truly guided by the same Spirit to adopt a right measure, or form a correct deci-

---

<sup>1</sup> These expressions of *universality* are a plain proof, to such as are capable of receiving proof, that these promises were not restricted to the existing generation of disciples.

I do not doubt, however, that these,

and every other passage of Scripture, on whatever subject, may be explained away, in some mode or other, by one who is resolutely bent on doing so. See Essay IX. Second Series, § 1.

sion ; but he never can *know* this with certainty, before the day of judgment. It is not that spiritual aid is now *withdrawn*, but that it is *imperceptible* ; as indeed its ordinary sanctifying influence *always was*.<sup>1</sup> It is to be known only by its fruits ; of which we must judge by a diligent and candid examination of Scripture, and a careful, humble, self-distrusting exercise of our own fallible judgment.

It is conceivable, therefore, that an individual, or a church, may be, in fact, *free* from error ; but none can ever be (either at the present moment, or in future) *safe* from error. We are not bound to believe, or to suspect, that any of the doctrines we hold, are erroneous ; but we are bound never to feel such a confidence in their correctness, as to shut the door against objection, and to dispense with a perpetual and vigilant examination. Even the fullest conviction that a complete perfection in soundness of doctrine is attainable, has in it nothing of arrogance,—nothing of a presumptuous claim to infallibility, as long as we steadily keep in view, that even one who should have attained this, never can, in this life, be *certain* of it.<sup>2</sup> We are taught, I think, in Scripture, to expect that the pious and diligent student will be assisted by the divine guidance ; and that in proportion as he is humble, patient, sincere, and watchfully on his guard against that unseen current of passions and prejudices which is ever tending to drive him out of the right course,—in the same degree will he succeed in attaining all necessary religious truths. But how far he *has* exercised these virtues, or how far he may have been deceiving himself, he never can be certain, till the great day of account. In the mean time, he must *act* on his convictions, as if he were certain of their being correct ; he must *examine* and re-examine the grounds of them, as if he suspected them of being erroneous.

In this it is that great part of our trial in the present life

---

<sup>1</sup> See Essay IX. Second Series, § 7.

<sup>2</sup> See note (M) at the end.



consists : and it is precisely analogous to what takes place in the greater part of temporal concerns. The skilful and cautious navigator keeps his reckoning with care, but yet never so far trusts to that as not to “keep a look-out,” as it is termed, and to “take an observation,” when opportunity offers. There is no risk incurred, from his strongly hoping that his computations will prove correct ; provided he never resigns himself to such an indolent reliance on them as to neglect any opportunity of verifying them. The belief, again, whether true or false, that it is possible for a time-keeper to go with perfect exactness, can never mislead any one who is careful to make allowance for the possibility of error in his own, and to compare it, whenever he has opportunity, with the Dial which receives the light from heaven.

§ 10 Such, then, is the view we must take of the Creeds and Formularies of our Church, and of all human, and consequently fallible compositions, of that class which the Inspired Writers, guided by super-human wisdom, have omitted to supply. To *believe* any doctrines to be erroneous, which we sincerely hold, is impossible, and a contradiction in terms ; to *suspect* them of error, is by no means necessary ; but it is necessary to acknowledge and allow for the *possibility* of error,—in short, the absence of infallibility,—in every church and in every man.

Nor must we be content to acknowledge a *liability* to error, in the sense which some seem to attach to the phrase ; viz. as applying to the *future* only, and not to the *present* : in the same sense in which we speak of a glass vessel as *liable* to be broken ; *i. e.* fragile ; though, perhaps, we are confident there is *now* no flaw in it. Those who admit that their church may possibly *hereafter* fall into error, but seem to regard it as an impossibility that she should be in any error *now*, are, to all practical purposes, setting up the Romish claim of infallibility ; for, as the Future *will be* the Present, so, their suc-

cessors are as likely to be confident of the impossibility of present error, as themselves.

But the self-distrust, and perpetual care, and diligent watchfulness, and openness to conviction, here recommended, are so far from necessarily implying a state of painful and unceasing doubt, that, as they furnish the best safeguard against error, so they afford the best grounds for a cheering hope of having attained truth. The more cautious we are, both as individuals and as a church, to “work out our salvation with fear and trembling,” the better-founded trust may we entertain that “God worketh in us, both to will and to do, of his good pleasure.” As long as all such human compositions as I have been speaking of are left open to inquiry, and are incessantly tried by Scripture and by Reason,—as long as we hold ourselves ready to renounce any that shall be proved unscriptural, and to alter in form any that shall be proved inexpedient,—and as long as we keep these compositions to their own proper uses, and make the Scriptures our only standard of appeal for the proof of any doctrine,—so long, we shall have been making that use both of the Bible and of the Church,—of Reason and of Revelation,—of all the advantages, natural and supernatural, that we enjoy,—which divine wisdom evidently designed: so long we shall have been doing our utmost to conform to the will of God; and so long, consequently, we shall have the better reason for cherishing an humble hope that He, “the Spirit of Truth,” is and will be, with us, to enlighten our understanding, to guide our conduct, and to lead us onwards to that state in which Faith shall be succeeded by Sight, and Hope, by Enjoyment.

---

## NOTE TO ESSAY VI.

NOTE M, page 228.

THE same reasoning will apply to the case of Moral conduct; and indeed, to men's judgments and conduct on all other subjects likewise. It is not, in any case, the belief that exemption from error is, either partially or completely, attainable, that leads to arrogance or presumptuous carelessness; but, the belief of the individual that *he has* attained it, or, that one who shall have attained it, may *know* with certainty that he has done so.

If a man believes, for instance, that there may be some human actions so performed, under the promised guidance of the Holy Spirit, as to be completely virtuous,—free from all admixture of sin,—in short, perfect,—this belief, whether agreeable or not to the fact, can have no tendency to make him conceited or careless, provided he always maintains that no action, even though it should really be of this description, can be (by Man) known with infallible certainty to be such.

On the other hand, one who entertains the opposite opinion, may yet, conceivably, be deficient in humility and in watchfulness. For he may hold, that every, the best, human action, is, and ever must be, alloyed with some mixture of human infirmities; and yet he may, without inconsistency, believe that some part, or even the whole, of his own conduct, is, with all its imperfections, *as near* an approach to perfection as can possibly be expected of such a Being as man. And whatever he may profess, even with the most sincere intention, he will not really be either mortified or alarmed at the thought of his not having attained a degree of perfection which he holds to be morally impossible.

Many persons persuade both others and themselves; that they are sufficiently cultivating Christian humility,<sup>1</sup> by dwelling much on the weakness and depravity of human nature,—on the numerous

---

<sup>1</sup> A well-known little book, entitled *Hymns for Infant Minds*, (I believe by some of the Taylor family,) contains (Nos. 11 and 12) a better practical description of Christian Humility, and its opposite, than I ever met with in so

small a compass. Though very intelligible and touching, to a mere child, a man of the most mature understanding, if not quite destitute of the virtue in question, may be the wiser and the better for it.

temptations which beset us, and on the errors and sins which *every man* must be expected to fall into. And if they are reminded that, according to the Scriptures, provision is made by divine grace for purifying and strengthening our nature, and guarding us against temptation, they will often reply, yes, but after all, every one does fall into many sins. Now however true this may be, and to whatever extent, still the consideration of it does not necessarily produce vigilance and humility. The kind of self-abasement thus generated is the same we feel when acknowledging Man's inability to "add a cubit to his stature," or to "remove mountains," or to foretell future events. No one is much ashamed, or put on his guard, by a consciousness of being no better than what, he is persuaded, the wisest and best of his species *must* be.

However far, in point of fact, sinless perfection may be from being attainable, it is not our deficiency in any thing that we regard as *unattainable*, but, in what we regard as *attainable*, that tends to make us humble and diligent. The provisions of divine assistance which have been made, do, as we see but too plainly, in many instances fail, more or less, of their object, through Man's negligence or perverseness: it may be true that they never do, or will completely succeed in attaining that object: but still, it is not so far forth as we feel assured they will *fail*, but so far forth as we believe that they *may succeed* in that object, that our zeal and watchfulness are excited.

The danger of arrogance then is incurred, not by any one's opinion, *generally*, on this point (whether true or false) but, by his confidence respecting *himself*:—his belief that he either *knows*, or may hereafter in this present life, know, that he *is* perfect. "If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves," would be not the less true and important, even on the supposition that any one of us actually had completely subdued, by divine help, all sin; for he would not be enabled to know it, nor authorised to say it. "I know nothing (says Paul, speaking of the discharge of his ministerial duties) by myself;" (*i. e.* against myself: οὐδὲν ἑμαυτῷ σέβουδα) "yet am I not hereby justified, but he that judgeth me is the Lord. Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts; and then shall every man have [his] praise of God." If one man is confident that the moon is inhabited, and the other, that it is not, though one of these assertions must be in itself true, both of these men would alike "deceive themselves," by pronouncing with certainty, where they could have no certain knowledge.

## APPENDIX.

---

### ABSENCE OF A PRIESTHOOD.

---

ONE of the most remarkable and least noticed of the peculiarities of the Christian Religion has been omitted in the preceding Essays, as having been treated of in a Discourse delivered at Oxford on the 5th of November, 1821, which, with four others, I subjoined to the second edition of the *Bampton Lectures*.<sup>1</sup> A brief notice, however, of the subject and outline of the argument, connected as it is with the object of this volume, may be not unsuitably subjoined to it.

The peculiarity alluded to is, that *the Christian Religion alone is without a Priest*. The ambiguity of language, and also the erroneous practice of some Christian Churches, render it necessary to offer proofs of an assertion, which, when distinctly understood, and applied to the religion as taught in Scripture, is at once evident.<sup>2</sup>

It is well known that certain ministers of religion were ordained by Christ and his Apostles, and have continued in an unbroken succession down to the present day: and it is not to be wondered at, that the name "Priest" should be applied in common to these and to the *ministers* of every other religion, true, or false: but the point to be observed is, that their *office* is essentially and fundamentally different. When the title is applied, for instance, to a Jewish priest, and to a Christian, it is applied equivocally; not to denote two different *kinds* of priests, but in two different senses; the essential

---

<sup>1</sup> See also Sermon IV. on the *Consecration of a Church*.

<sup>2</sup> See Essay II. on the *Kingdom of Christ*, § 14; and also Eden's *Theological Dictionary*, Art. "Priest." This valuable work has been stigmatized as "heretical" by some writers who perhaps did not perceive, that, to well-

judging readers, they were thereby implying its soundness. For such unsupported censures imply both that a book is not beneath notice, and also that there is the *will*, though not the *power*, to refute its conclusions, and to obtain an ecclesiastical judgment against the Author for heresy.

circumstances which *constitute* the priestly office in the one, being wanting in the other. Accordingly there are in Greek, as is well known, two words, totally unconnected in etymology, which are used to denote the two offices respectively; the Jewish priest, and also that of the Pagan religions, being invariably called *HIEREUS* [in Latin, *Sacerdos*]; the Christian priest, *EPISCOPUS*, or oftener *PRESBYTEROS*, from which last our English word "Priest" is manifestly formed. It is remarkable, however, that it is never rendered "Priest" in our version of the Bible, but always according to its etymology, "Elder;" and that wherever the word Priest occurs, it is always used to correspond to *Hiereus*. This last title is applied frequently to Jesus Christ Himself, but never to any other character under the Gospel-dispensation.

This circumstance alone would render it highly probable, that Christ and his Apostles did not intend to institute in the Christian Church any office corresponding to that of Priest in the Jewish: otherwise, they would doubtless have designated it by a name so familiarly known. And if we look to the doctrines of their religion, we shall plainly see that they could have had no such intention. For it was manifestly the essence of the Priest's office (both in the true religion of Moses, and in the Pagan imitations of the truth) to offer Sacrifice and Atonement for the People—to address the Deity on their behalf, as a Mediator and Intercessor—and to make a Propitiation for them. All these are described as belonging to Christ, and to Him alone, under the Gospel-dispensation; which consequently (alone of all religions we are acquainted with) has, on earth no Priest at all.<sup>1</sup>

The office of the Christian Ministers, the Elders or Presbyters, whom the Apostles by their divine commission ordained, is the administration of such rites (the Christian sacraments) as are essentially different from sacrifice;<sup>2</sup> and, the *instruction* of the people; an office not especially allotted to the Jewish priests, but rather to the whole of the Levites; and so little appropriated even to them, that persons of any other tribe<sup>3</sup> were allowed to teach publicly in the synagogues.

---

<sup>1</sup> Nearly the same reasonings are applicable to the absence, under the Christian dispensation, of a literal TEMPLE, as well as of a Priest.

For an able development of these views, see Hinds' *Three Temples of the One God*.

<sup>2</sup> And it is remarkable that even the administration of these rites is not, by

any express injunction of Scripture, confined to them.

<sup>3</sup> As, for instance, Jesus himself, who was of the tribe of Judah, and Paul, of the tribe of Benjamin. The Prophets also, who seem to have been the authorized *instructors*, were not necessarily of the tribe of Levi.

It deserves then to be kept in mind,

I. That Priest, in the two senses just noticed, does not merely denote two *different* things, but is, strictly speaking, *equivocal*. On the one hand, the word "house," for instance, is not equivocal when applied to the houses of the ancients, and to our own, though the two are considerably *different*; because both are the same *in that which the word "house" denotes*, viz. in being "a building for man's habitation:" on the other hand, the word "publican" in its ordinary sense, and in that in which it occurs in our version of the New Testament, is equivocal, though in each case it denotes a *man* in a certain profession of life; because the professions indicated in each case respectively, by that term, are essentially different. And the same is the case with the word Priest, in the two senses now under consideration.

II. That though there is in the Greek, Romish, and some other Churches, a pretended Sacrifice, offered by a Sacerdotal Priest, this creates no just objection to what has been said; since their practice in this point is a manifest corruption of Christianity, totally unsupported by any warrant of Scripture, and manifestly at variance with the whole spirit of the Gospel; and what we are speaking of is, the Religion as originally instituted, not as subsequently depraved.

III. That the peculiarity in question, as well as every other of any consequence, affords a strong presumption of the truth of the religion; and this, independent of any question as to the *excellence* of the peculiarity. For either an impostor or an enthusiast would have been almost sure, on such a point, to fall in with the prevailing notions and expectations of men; as experience shows, in the case of such a multitude of different systems of religion which confessedly have emanated from the sources alluded to. If our religion had been devised by *Man*, it would, in all probability, have been, in this point, (as well as in many others) different from what it is. And if it could *not* have come from Man, it must have come from *God*. It cannot be deemed therefore an insignificant circumstance that the Christian religion should *differ from all others, in a point in which amidst their infinite varieties, they all agree*.

IV. That the charge of *Priestcraft*, so often brought indiscriminately against all religions, by those whose hostility is in fact directed against Christianity, falls entirely to the ground, when applied, not to the corruptions of some Churches, (which certainly do lie open to the imputation,) but to the religion of the Gospel, as founded on the writings of its promulgators. It is a religion which has no Priest on earth,—no mortal Intercessor to stand between God and his worshippers; but which teaches its votaries to apply, for themselves, to their great and divine High Priest, and to "come boldly to the throne of grace, that they may find help in time of

need." Nor are the Christian Ministers appointed, as the infidel would insinuate, for the purpose of keeping the people in darkness, but expressly for the purpose of *instructing* them in their religion.

V. Lastly, that Christians should be warned, if they would conform to the design of the Author of their Faith, not to think of *substituting* the religion of the Minister for their own;<sup>1</sup> his office being, according to Christ's institution, not to serve God instead of them, but to teach and lead them to serve Him themselves.

---

<sup>1</sup> See Essay (Third Series) on *Vicarious Religion*.

---



# I N D E X.

	PAGE
Analogy of divine attributes to human, Essay II. § 3 - - -	103
— of Christians to children, Essay v. § 2, 3 - - -	169—182
Antoninus, Marcus, his notions of the consequence of death, Note D to Essay I. - - - - -	82
Apostles, inculcation by, of Christian duties, from the motives of gratitude and love, Essay III. § 2 - - - - -	129
— their omitting to draw up Catechisms, &c. Essay VI. § 2 -	209
Aristotle, his supposed reference to a Future State, founded on a mistake, Essay I. Note A. - - - - -	76
Athenians, not believers in a Future State, Essay I. § 4 - - -	31
Bernard, translation of Vitringa, Essay VI. § 1 - - - - -	203
Bible, not designed for the gratification of speculative curiosity, Essay IV. § 3 - - - - -	148
— historical portions of, not necessarily inspired, Essay IV. § 4	150
Blind, case of a, youth, couched by Chesselden, Essay v. Note K -	198
Body, resurrection of, Essay I. § 5 - - - - -	37
Butler, Bp., his view of the formation of habits, Essay IV. § 8 -	165
Cave, illustration from, of the soul's dwelling in the body, Essay I. § 5 - - - - -	38
Children, example of, proposed for a Christian's imitation, Essay v. § 1—9 - - - - -	168—197
Christ, an object of worship, Essay II. § 4 - - - - -	109
— his human character, attractive, Essay II. § 5 - - - - -	115
— love for, introduced as a motive, Essay III. § 5 - - - - -	136
Christianity "brought life and immortality to light," Essay I. § 1 - - - - -	20
— practical character of, Essay IV. § 4 - - - - -	150
Church, the appointed framer of formularies, Essay VI. § 6 -	217
Cicero, his opinions respecting a Future State, Essay I. Note B -	80
Copleston, Bp., his remarks on Analogy, Essay v. § 2 - - -	175
Cowley, his description of Eternity, Essay v. § 2 - - - - -	173
Creeds, why not transmitted in writing by the Apostles, Essay VI. § 7 - - - - -	220
Dispensation, old, sanctions of, temporal, Essay I. § 7 - - -	48
Dreams, Souls of the departed compared to, by the ancient Poets, Essay I. § 3 - - - - -	28
Eden, <i>Theological Dictionary</i> , Introduction, and Appendix, and Essay VI. § 1 - - - - -	9, 233, 204

	PAGE
Emmanuel, discourse on the name, Essay II. § 4 - - -	110
Episcopus, his opinion as to the non-revelation of a Future State by Moses, Essay I. Note F - - - - -	96
Eternity, Cowley, description of, Essay v. § 2 - - - -	173
Evil, origin of, not explained in Scripture, Essay I. § 6 - -	45
Feelings must be appealed to, as well as reason, with a view to practice, Essay III. § 5 - - - - -	136
God, attributes of, known only by analogies, Essay II. § 3 - -	103
Gospel, religion and morality of, inculcated in a peculiar manner, Essay II. § 1—6 - - - - -	98—118
Grotius, his opinion as to the non-revelation of a Future State by Moses, Essay I. Note F - - - - -	97
Hawkins, Dr., remarks of, on omission of systematic teaching in Scripture, Essay VI. § 2 - - - - -	205
Hinds, Bp., <i>History of the Rise of Christianity</i> , Essay IV. § 4 -	153
— his <i>Three Temples</i> , Essay IV. § 6 - - - - -	157
Homer, language of, respecting a Future State, Essay I. § 3 -	28
Immortality, Man's, not discoverable by Reason, Essay I. § 6 -	42
Incarnation, designed effect of the doctrine in the improvement of the character, Essay II. § 2, 3 - - - - -	101, 103
<i>Index to the Tracts for the Times</i> , Introduction - - - - -	3, 7
Infallibility of the Church, origin of the claim to, Essay VI. § 8 -	225
Infidelity, prevalence of, a natural result of the writings of a certain school, Introduction - - - - -	3
Jews, their notions respecting a Future State, Essay I. § 9 -	59
Job, book of, inconsistent with the doctrine of a Future State, Essay I. § 9 - - - - -	56
Judgment, private, the condemnation of, leads to a withdrawal of the thoughts from the subject of religion, Introduction -	7
King, Archbishop, opinion of, as to Man's notions of the Divine attributes, Essay II. Note G - - - - -	119
Knowledge, three things implied by, Essay I. § 2 - - - -	23
Law, obedience to, gives not a claim to reward, but only to exemption from punishment, Essay I. § 11 - - - -	66
— Mosaic, sanctions of, temporal, Essay I. Note E - - -	82
London, plague in, Essay I. § 4 - - - - -	32
Lucretius, his views of the dependence of the soul on the body, Essay I. § 5 - - - - -	38
— coincidence between him and Cicero as to the consequence of death, Note B to Essay I. - - - - -	81

	PAGE
Man, inquisitive nature of, Essay iv. § 1 - - - -	143
— his faculties gradually developed, Essay v. § 3 - -	177
Mede, Dr. Joseph, his remark on the Jewish notions of a future state, Essay i. § 9 - - - -	55
Moralists, apt to neglect the proper motive of Christian obedience, Essay iii. § 3 - - - -	131
Mysteries, speculative, man's eagerness to inquire into, Essay iv. § 8 - - - -	162
Mythology, ancient, vagueness of, as to the doctrine of a Future State, Essay i. § 3 - - - -	24
— consisted chiefly of matters of idle curiosity, Essay iv. § 2 -	144
Natural-religion, mistakes respecting, Essay i. § 8 - - -	52
Nature, inaccurate language respecting, Essay i. § 6 - -	42
Obedience, Christian motives to, have reference more to persons than to things, Essay iii. § 1 - - - -	126
Paley, his comparison of man in the present life, to a child, Essay v. § 3 - - - -	177
— his notion of the moral faculty, Essay v. Note L - -	201
Paul, his testimony as to the disbelief of a Future State by the Heathen, Essay i. § 4 - - - -	35
— his scanty narrative of his celestial vision, Essay iv. § 6 -	157
Peter, practical character of his Epistle, Essay iv. § 6 - -	158
Philosophers, ancient, notions of, respecting man's immortality, Essay i. § 4 - - - -	34
— their mode of giving moral instruction, contrasted with that of Jesus, Essay v. § 9 - - - -	195
Plague, Athenian, account of, shows an entire disbelief of the fables of Elysium and Tartarus, Essay i. § 4 - -	30
Pliny, his account of the effects of the eruption of Vesuvius, Essay i § 4 - - - -	34
— his account of the early Christians, Essay vi. § 5 - -	214
Prayer, the Lord's appropriate use of, Essay vi. § 5 - -	215
Priest, ambiguity of the term, Appendix - - - -	233
— only one (sacerdotal) priest under the Gospel, Appendix -	234
Reason, province of, in religious matters, Essay v. § 7 - -	188
Religion, natural, mistakes relative to, Essay i. § 11 - -	65
Revelation, what may be expected in a genuine, Essay iv. § 3 -	147
Reward, notion of immortal happiness being the natural reward of a virtuous life, Essay i. § 12 - - - -	71
Sacred Writers. See <i>Writers</i> .	
Salvation, Gospel doctrine of, furnishes no licence for sin, Essay i. § 12 - - - -	72

Scriptures, Christian, compared with other supposed revelations,	
Essay iv. § 2, 3 - - - - -	144—150
Seneca, opinion of, as to a Future State, Essay i. Note B - - -	81
Sight, case of its restoration, Essay v. Note K - - - - -	198
Socinians, unwise mode of opposing, Essay i. § 7 - - - - -	50
— their mode of interpreting Scripture represents it as a	
snare, Essay ii. § 4 - - - - -	111
Soul, the body not the prison of, Essay i. § 5 - - - - -	37
— question of its separate existence, not decided in Scripture,	
Essay i. Note C - - - - -	81
Stoics, their mode of teaching morality, Essay ii. § 5 - - -	113
Swedenborg, supposed revelations of, Essay iv. § 2 - - -	147
Synagogue, Vitringa on, Essay vi. § 1 - - - - -	203
Temple, Christians represented as living stones of, Essay iv. § 5	157
Testament, New, omits what, humanly speaking, we should have	
expected to find in it, Essay vi. § 1 - - - - -	203
Thucydides, his account of the effects of the plague, Essay i. § 4	29
Tradition, consequence of representing it as a necessary inter-	
preter of Scripture, Introduction - - - - -	7
Trinity, doctrine of, practical, Essay iv. § 5 - - - - -	156
Vitringa. See <i>Bernard</i> .	
Warburton, Bishop, his <i>Divine Legation</i> , Introduction and	
Essay i. § 7 - - - - -	14, 47
Writers, sacred, their inspiration proved from the scantiness of	
their details respecting the invisible world, Essay iv. § 6	157
— and from the omission of Creeds, &c., Essay vi. § 4 - - -	214
— the works attributed to them proved not to be forgeries	
of the early Christians from the above circumstance,	
and also from their not applying the title of <i>Christians</i> ,	
Essay vi. § 1 - - - - -	205

# WORKS

BY RICHARD WHATELY, D.D.

*ARCHBISHOP OF DUBLIN.*

---

Essays (Second Series) on some of the Difficulties in the Writings of the Apostle Paul, and in other parts of the New Testament. SEVENTH and Cheaper EDITION. Octavo. 8s.

---

Essays (Third Series) on the Errors of Romanism having their Origin in Human Nature. FIFTH and Cheaper EDITION. Octavo. 7s. 6d.

---

Essays on some of the Dangers to Christian Faith which may arise from the Teaching or the Conduct of its Professors. SECOND EDITION. Octavo. 10s.

---

The Kingdom of Christ Delineated in Two Essays on our Lord's own Account of his Person, and of the Nature of his Kingdom, and on the Constitution, Powers, and Ministry of a Christian Church, as appointed by Himself. FIFTH EDITION. Octavo. 8s.

---

The Use and Abuse of Party-Feeling in Matters of Religion, considered in Eight Sermons preached in the year 1822, at the Bampton Lecture. To which are added Five Sermons, preached before the University of Oxford. And a Discourse by Archbishop King, with Notes and Appendix. THIRD EDITION. Octavo. 12s.

---

Charges and other Tracts.  
Octavo. 12s.

---

Sermons on various Subjects.  
THIRD EDITION, revised and enlarged. Octavo. 8s. 6d.

Thoughts on Church Government; being the Substance of a Charge delivered at the Visitation of the Diocese and of the Province of Dublin. 1844. 1s.

---

Reflections on a Grant to a Roman-catholic Seminary; being a Charge delivered at the Visitation of the Dioceses of Dublin and Glandelough. June 1845. 1s.

---

The Danger of Divisions within the Church, considered in a Charge delivered at the Visitation in St. Patrick's Cathedral. 1846. 1s.

---

Charge to the Clergy of the Dioceses of Dublin and Kildare, delivered at the Visitation in July, 1847. 2s.

---

The Right Use of National Afflictions; being a Charge delivered at the Annual Visitation of the Dioceses of Dublin and Kildare, in 1848. Octavo. 1s.

---

Charge delivered at the Annual Visitation in 1849. 1s. 6d.

---

Infant Baptism considered, in a Charge delivered at the Triennial Visitation of the Province of Dublin, in 1850. SECOND EDITION, with Additions. Octavo. 2s.

---

Protective Measures on behalf of the Established Church, considered in a Charge delivered in 1851. Octavo. 2s.

---

Thoughts on the New Dogma of the Church of Rome. A Charge, delivered in June, 1855. 1s.

---

The Right Principle of the Interpretation of Scripture, considered in reference to the Eucharist and the Doctrines connected therewith. A Charge, delivered in 1856. 1s. 6d.

Thoughts on the Sabbath ; to which is subjoined,  
An Address to the Inhabitants of Dublin, on the Observance of the Lord's Day. Octavo. FOURTH EDITION, enlarged. 1s. 6d.

---

Christian Saints, as described in the New Testament, being a Discourse delivered in St. Patrick's Cathedral, Dublin, before the Additional Curates' Fund Society. 1s.

---

A View of the Scripture Revelations concerning a Future State, laid before his Parishioners, by a COUNTRY PASTOR. SEVENTH EDITION. 5s.

---

Lectures on the Characters of our Lord's Apostles. By a COUNTRY PASTOR. SECOND EDITION, enlarged. 3s. 6d.

---

Lectures on the Scripture Revelations respecting Good and Evil Angels. SECOND EDITION, revised. 3s. 6d.

---

Introductory Lessons on Christian Evidences. The FOURTEENTH EDITION, revised and enlarged. 6d.

---

Introductory Lessons on the History of Religious Worship, being a Sequel to the Lessons on Christian Evidences. SECOND EDITION, 2s. ; large paper Copies, cloth gilt, 3s. 6d.

---

Introductory Lessons on Morals.  
1s. 6d.

---

Elements of Logic ; with all the Author's Emendations and Additions, and reduced in size and price. Reprinted from the Ninth (Octavo) Edition. In crown octavo. 4s. 6d., bound in cloth.

Elements of Rhetoric; with all the Author's Emendations and Additions, and reduced in size and price. Reprinted from the Seventh (Octavo) Edition. In crown octavo. 4s. 6d., bound in cloth.

Copies of the Demy Octavo Editions of Archbishop Whately's *Logic* and *Rhetoric* (price 10s. 6d. each), printed uniformly with the Author's other Works, may still be had.

Bacon's Essays, with Annotations. Octavo. 10s. 6d.

Introductory Lectures on Political Economy, with Remarks on Tithes, and on Poor-Laws, and on Penal Colonies. FOURTH EDITION. Revised and Enlarged. Octavo. 8s.

Substance of a Speech delivered in the House of Lords, March 26, 1847, on a Motion for a Committee on the Irish Poor Law. 6d.

The Church and the Universities. Statements and Reflections, in answer to an Inquiry concerning the Movement connected with the Appointment of the Bishop of Hereford. 1848. Octavo. 1s.

Historic Doubts relative to Napoleon Buonaparte. TWELFTH EDITION, revised and enlarged. 2s.

Easy Lessons on Reasoning, (reprinted from the *Saturday Magazine*.) The EIGHTH EDITION, revised. 1s. 6d.

Easy Lessons on Money Matters, for the Use of Young People. FOURTEENTH EDITION. 1s.

London: JOHN W. PARKER & SON, Publishers, West Strand.









